# Higher-Order Finite-Difference Methods for Partial Differential Equations 

by<br>Tasleem Akhter Cheema<br>Department of Mathematics and Statistics, Brunel University, Uxbridge, Middlesex, England. UB8 3PH

A thesis submitted for the degree of

## Doctor of Philosophy

To my parents and my children

Shozab Ali, Tansheet Ali and Aisha Tasneem.


#### Abstract

This thesis develops two families of numerical methods, based upon rational approximations having distinct real poles, for solving first- and second-order parabolic/ hyperbolic partial differential equations. These methods are thirdand fourth-order accurate in space and time, and do not require the use of complex arithmetic. In these methods first- and second-order spatial derivatives are approximated by finite-difference approximations which produce systems of ordinary differential equations expressible in vector-matrix forms. Solutions of these systems satisfy recurrence relations which lead to the development of parallel algorithms suitable for computer architectures consisting of three or four processors. Finally, the methods are tested on advection, advection-diffusion and wave equations with constant coefficients.


## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I am pleased to express my warmest thanks to my supervisor Professor E. H. Twizell for his invaluable suggestions, continuous encouragement and constructive criticism during both the period of research and the writing of this thesis. He has always given patiently of his time and tolerated my untimely disturbance.

I also express my sincere gratitude to Dr. S.A . Matar for his continuous guidance in using the computer packages LaTEX and MATLAB.

I would like to thank the Government of Pakistan for granting ex-Pakistan leave during the period of study.

I am indebted to my husband for his moral and financial support.

## Contents

1 Preliminaries ..... 1
1.1 Introduction ..... 1
1.2 Method of Lines ..... 3
1.3 Rational Approximations to $\exp (t)$ ..... 3
1.4 Notations ..... 4
1.5 Analysis of Difference Schemes ..... 5
1.5.1 Local Truncation Error ..... 5
1.5.2 Local Discretization Error ..... 5
1.5.3 Consistency ..... 5
1.5.4 Stability ..... 6
1.5.5 Convergence ..... 8
2 Third-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection Equa- tion ..... 10
2.1 Introduction ..... 10
2.2 The Model Problem ..... 11
2.3 The Method ..... 11
2.4 Algorithm ..... 20
2.5 Numerical Examples ..... 22
2.5.1 Example 1 ..... 23
2.5.2 Example 2 ..... 24
2.6 Non-linear Problem ..... 25
3 Fourth-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection Equa- tion ..... 42
3.1 The Method ..... 42
3.2 Algorithm ..... 58
3.3 Numerical Examples ..... 62
3.3.1 Example 1 ..... 62
3.3.2 Example 2 ..... 63
4 Third-Order Methods for the Advection-Diffusion Equation ..... 71
4.1 The Model Problem ..... 71
4.2 The Method ..... 72
4.3 Algorithm ..... 77
4.4 Numerical Example ..... 79
5 Fourth-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection-Diffusion Equation ..... 85
5.1 The Method ..... 85
5.2 Algorithm ..... 93
5.3 Numerical Example ..... 96
6 Third-Order Finite-Difference Methods for Second-Order Hy- perbolic Partial Differential Equations ..... 102
6.1 The Model Problem ..... 102
6.2 Discretization of $R \cup \partial R$ ..... 103
6.3 The Method ..... 103
6.4 Solution at the First Time-Step ..... 106
6.5 Rational Approximation to Matrix Exponential Function ..... 107
6.6 Accuracy ..... 108
6.7 Development of Parallel Algorithm ..... 110
6.8 Numerical Examples ..... 111
6.8.1 Example 1 ..... 111
6.8.2 Example 2 ..... 113
7 Fourth-Order Finite-Difference Methods for Second-Order Hyperbolic Partial Differential Equations ..... 120
7.1 The method ..... 120
7.2 Solution at the First Time-Step ..... 122
7.3 Rational Approximation to Matrix Exponentional Function ..... 124
7.4 Accuracy ..... 125
7.5 Development of Parallel Algorithm ..... 127
7.6 Numerical Examples ..... 128
7.6.1 Example 1 ..... 129
7.6.2 Example 2 ..... 130
8 Summary and Conclusions ..... 135
8.1 Summary ..... 135
8.2 Conclusions ..... 138

## List of Figures

2.1 Theoretical solution of example 1 for $k=2$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 32
2.2 Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=2, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 33
2.3 Theoretical solution of example 1 for $k=4$ at time $t=10.0$ ..... 34
2.4 Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=4, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=10.0$ ..... 35
2.5 Theoretical solution of example 2 at time $t=1.0$ ..... 36
2.6 Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=1.0$ ..... 37
2.7 Theoretical solution of example 2 at time $t=10.0$ ..... 38
2.8 Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=10.0$ ..... 39
2.9 Theoretical solution of Non-Linear Problem at $t=15$. ..... 40
2.10 Numerical solution of Non-Linear Problem using $h=0.1$ and $r=1.0$ at $t=15$. ..... 41
3.1 Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=2, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 67
3.2 Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=4, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=10.0$ ..... 68
3.3 Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=1.0$ ..... 69
3.4 Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=10.0$ ..... 70
4.1 Theoretical solution of example 1 for time $t=0.5$ ..... 83
4.2 Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 84
5.1 Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 101
6.1 Theoretical solution of example 1 for time $t=1.0$ ..... 116
6.2 Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=1.0$ ..... 117
6.3 Theoretical solution of example 2 for time $t=0.5$ ..... 118
6.4 Numerical solution of example 2 for $h, l=0.05$ at time $t=0.5$ ..... 119
7.1 Numerical solution of example 1 for $h, l=\frac{1}{12}$ at time $t=1.0$. ..... 133
7.2 Numerical solution of example 1 for $h, l=\frac{1}{24}$ at time $t=0.5$. ..... 134

## List of Tables

2.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 28
2.2 Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10$ ..... 29
2.3 Maximum errors for Example 2 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10.0$ ..... 29
2.4 Maximum errors for Example 2 showing third-order accuracy. ..... 29
2.5 Algorithm 2 ..... 30
2.6 Maximum errors for non-linear problem ..... 31
3.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 65
3.2 Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10$ ..... 66
3.3 Maximum errors for Example 2 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10.0$ ..... 66
3.4 Maximum errors showing fourth-order accuracy for Example 2 at $t=1.0$ and 10.0 ..... 66
4.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 81
4.2 Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5$ ..... 82
5.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 99
5.2 Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5$ ..... 100
6.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 114
6.2 Maximum absolute errors for Example 1 ..... 115
6.3 Maximum absolute errors for Example 2 ..... 115
7.1 Algorithm 1 ..... 131
7.2 Maximum absolute errors for Example 1 ..... 132
7.3 Maximum absolute errors for Example 2 ..... 132

## Chapter 1

## Preliminaries

### 1.1 Introduction

With the increasing availability of powerful computing machines and the improvement in numerical techniques finite difference methods are being used more and more in the solution of physical problems that arise in various branches of continuum physics such as heat flow, diffusion, fluid dynamics, magneto-fluid dynamics, electromagnetism, wave mechanics, radiation transfer, neutron transfer, elastic vibrations ([1], [33]), medical fluid dynamics, bioengeering, soil physics and chemistry [1] and population dynamics [16]. In the description of these physical problems partial differential equations and systems of such equations appear which involve two or more independent variables that determine the behaviour of the dependent variable.

It is often useful to classify partial differential equations into two kinds: steady-state equations (for example, the Poisson equation and the biharmonic equation) and evolutionary equations which model systems that undergo change as a function of time and they are important inter alia in the
description of wave phenomena, thermodynamics, diffusive processes and population dynamics [16].

According to a natural classification of partial differential equations depending upon characteristic directions a partial differential equation may be elliptic, parabolic or hyperbolic (see [35], [41], etc). Elliptic equations are of the steady-state type whilst both parabolic and hyperbolic partial differential equations are evolutionary (unsteady).

The method of characteristics (see [35], [41], etc) is undoubtedly the most effective method for solving hyperbolic equations in one space dimension, but loses its impact in higher dimensions where it is less satisfactory [5], and where, therefore, finite differences still have a role to play. So in the last two decades much attention has been given in the literature to the development, analysis and implementation of stable and accurate methods for the numerical solution of partial differential equations with mixed initial and boundary conditions specified.

There are many forms of model hyperbolic partial differential equations that are used in analysing various finite difference methods. These range from simple one-dependent variable first-order partial differential equations through multiple dependent-variable second-order partial differential equations with as many as three space variables [23]; for example, finite-difference methods for the wave equation are used in [4], [9], [11], [12], [24], [27], [30], [34], [40], [47], [49], and [50] and accurate methods for first-order hyperbolic partial differential equations are developed in [5], [20] and [31].

In this thesis third- and fourth-order numerical methods for the solution of hyperbolic partial differential equations which do not require complex
arithmetic will be developed and tested on well-known problems with exact solutions known.

### 1.2 Method of Lines

Covering the region, in which a numerical solution is to be solved, by a rectangular grid with sides parallel to the axes and then replacing the spatial derivatives in the partial differential equation by their finite-difference approximations, thus transforming the partial differential equations, is called the Method of Lines. Time-dependent problems in Partial Differential Equations (PDEs) are often solved by the Method of Lines (MOL). By this method the initial/boundary-value problem is transformed into an initial-value in system form; it can be written in vector-matrix form and its solution satisfies a recurrence relation. Then numerical methods are developed using suitable approximations in this recurrence relation.

### 1.3 Rational Approximations to $\exp (t)$

Several algorithms for the numerical solution of partial differential equations can be generated through an approximation to the elementary function appearing in the recurrence relation, which is satisfied by the exact solution of the initial value problem. The use of rational functions for this purpose has a long and rich history (see, for example, [4], [5], [27], [32], [38], [39], [47], [54] and referrences therein). Perhaps the most well known and frequently used are the Padé approximants due to their order and/or stability properties. But methods for solving partial differential equations corresponding to higher-order Padé approximations entail the use of complex arithmetic in a
splitting context. Third- and fourth-order, L-acceptable rational approximations to $\exp (t)$, introduced by Taj and Twizell in [38] and [39], which possess real and distinct poles are given, for a real scalar $t$, as

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{3}(t)=\frac{1+(1-a) t+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a+b\right) t^{2}}{1-a t+b t^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a}{2}+b\right) t^{3}} \tag{1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{4}(t)=\frac{1+(1-a) t+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a+b\right) t^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a}{2}+b-c\right) t^{3}}{1-a t+b t^{2}-c t^{3}+\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a}{8}-\frac{b}{2}+c\right) t^{4}} \tag{1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $a, b$ and $c$ are real numbers, respectively. The error constants for these rational approximations are

$$
-\frac{1}{8}+\frac{a}{3}-\frac{b}{2}
$$

and

$$
-\frac{1}{30}+\frac{a}{8}-\frac{b}{3}+\frac{c}{2}
$$

respectively. These approximations to $\exp (t)$ will play a particular rôle in later chapters.

### 1.4 Notations

Usually the theoretical solution of a hyperbolic partial differential equation is denoted by $u$ and the theoretical solution of a finite-difference equation is denoted by $U$, while the computed solution is denoted by $\tilde{U}$. The position at which the solution is taken is shown by appropriate indices, for example, $u_{m}^{n}$ denotes the theoretical solution of a certain hyperbolic partial differential equation in one space dimension at mesh point $(x, t)=(m h, n l)$ and $U_{m}^{n}$ denotes the theoretical solution of a finite-difference scheme at the same mesh point. A description of each mesh used in this thesis is given as it is introduced.

### 1.5 Analysis of Difference Schemes

### 1.5.1 Local Truncation Error

Suppose that a hyperbolic equation is written in the form

$$
L(u)=0
$$

with exact solution $u$, and let $F(U)=0$ represent the approximating finitedifference equation with exact solution $U$. Replacing $U$ by $u$ at each mesh point occurring in the finite-difference scheme, and carrying out Taylor expansions about ( $m h, n l$ ), the value of $l^{-1} F_{m, n}(u)-L\left(u_{m}^{n}\right)$ (in case of first-order hyperbolic equation) or $l^{-2} F_{m, n}(u)-L\left(u_{m}^{n}\right)$ (in case of second-order hyperbolic equation) is the local truncation error at the mesh point ( $m h, n l$ ); that is, the local truncation error is the difference between the finite-difference scheme and the differential equation it replaces. The order of the scheme is the order of the lowest-order terms in $h$ and $l$.

### 1.5.2 Local Discretization Error

The local discretization error is the difference between the theoretical solution of the differential and difference equations and is represented at the mesh point ( $m h, n l$ ) by

$$
z_{m}^{n}=u_{m}^{n}-U_{m}^{n}
$$

### 1.5.3 Consistency

A difference approximation to a hyperbolic equation is consistent if

$$
\text { local truncation error } \longrightarrow 0
$$

as space and time steps are refined.

### 1.5.4 Stability

A finite difference scheme used to solve a $P D E$ is said to be stable if the difference between the theoretical solution of the difference equation and the solution actually obtained at the mesh point ( $m h, n l$ ) remains bounded as $n$ increases, for fixed $h, l$ and $h, l \rightarrow 0$ for a fixed value of $t=n l$. The concept of stability is concerned with the boundedness of the solution of the finitedifference equation (Twizell [41]) and this is examined by finding conditions under which

$$
Z_{m}^{n}=U_{m}^{n}-\tilde{U}_{m}^{n}
$$

remains bounded as $n$ increases for fixed $h, l$.

There are two methods which are commonly used for examining this notion of stability of a finite difference scheme for hyperbolic partial differential equations namely, the von Neumann Method and the Matrix Method.
(a) The von Neumann Method

Consider the local discretization error

$$
Z_{m}^{n}=U_{m}^{n}-\tilde{U}_{m}^{n}
$$

and introduce the error function at a given time level $t$

$$
G(x, t)=e^{\alpha t} e^{i \beta x}
$$

where $\beta$ is real and $\alpha$ is, in general, complex, such that

$$
Z_{m}^{n}=G(x, t) \neq 0
$$

To investigate the error propagation as $t$ increases, it is necessary to find a solution of the finite-difference equation which reduces to $e^{i \beta x}$ when $t=0$.

Let such a solution be

$$
e^{\alpha t} e^{i \beta_{x}}=e^{\alpha n l} e^{i \beta m h}
$$

The original error component will not grow with time if

$$
\left|e^{\alpha l}\right| \leq 1
$$

for all $\alpha$. This is von Neumann's necessary condition for stability. Here the quantity

$$
\xi=e^{\alpha l}
$$

is called the amplification factor.
(b) The Matrix Method

The totality of difference equations connecting values of $\mathbf{U}$ at $t$ wo neighbouring time levels can be written in the matrix form

$$
\begin{equation*}
D \mathbf{U}^{n+1}=B \mathbf{U}^{n}+C \mathbf{U}^{n-1}+\mathbf{b}^{n} \tag{1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mathrm{U}^{k}(k=n-1, n, n+1)$ denotes the column vector

$$
\left[U_{1}^{k}, U_{2}^{k}, \ldots, U_{N}^{k}\right]^{T}
$$

$\mathbf{b}^{\boldsymbol{n}}$ is a vector which depends on the boundary conditions and $D, B, C$ are square matrices of order $N$ (where $N$ is the number of mesh points at each time level). In the case of a differential equation with constant coefficients the matrices $D, B, C$ are constant, in the case of a variable coefficients problems, the matrices $D, B, C$ are evaluated at times $(n+1) l, n l,(n-1) l$ respectively. Writing (1.1) in the form

$$
\mathbf{U}^{n+1}=D^{-1} B \mathbf{U}^{n}+D^{-1} C \mathbf{U}^{n-1}+D^{-1} \mathbf{b}^{n}
$$

follows that a perturbation $\mathbf{Z}^{0}$ of the initial conditions will satisfy

$$
\mathbf{Z}^{n+1}=D^{-1} B \mathbf{Z}^{n}+D^{-1} C \mathbf{Z}^{n-1}
$$

This may be written as

$$
\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathbf{Z}^{n+1}  \tag{1.4}\\
\mathbf{Z}^{n}
\end{array}\right]=\left[\begin{array}{rr}
D^{-1} A & D^{-1} C \\
I & \bigcirc
\end{array}\right]\left[\begin{array}{c}
\mathbf{Z}^{n} \\
\mathbf{Z}^{n-1}
\end{array}\right]
$$

which is of the form

$$
\mathbf{E}^{n+1}=W \mathbf{E}^{n}
$$

where $\mathbf{E}^{n+1}=\left[\left(\mathbf{Z}^{n+1}\right)^{T},\left(\mathbf{Z}^{n}\right)^{T}\right]^{T}$. It follows that

$$
\left\|\mathbf{E}^{n+1}\right\| \leq\|W\|\left\|\mathbf{E}^{n}\right\|
$$

where \|. || denotes a suitable norm. The necessary and sufficient condition for the stability of a scheme based on a constant time step and proceeding indefinitely in time is

$$
\|W\| \leq 1
$$

for all $n$, and so the stability condition for the difference scheme, used in this way, depends on obtaining a suitable estimate for \|| $W \|$. When $W$ is symmetric,

$$
\|W\|_{2}=\max \left|\lambda_{1}\right|
$$

where $\lambda_{s}(s=1,2, \ldots, N)$ are the eigenvalues of $W$ and $\|.\|_{2}$ denotes the $L_{2}$-norm. Here, $\max \left|\lambda_{1}\right|$ is the spectral radius of $W$ and $W$ is called the amplification matrix.

### 1.5.5 Convergence

A finite-difference method for hyperbolic partial differential equations is said to be convergent if the local discretization error

$$
z_{m}^{n}=u_{m}^{n}-U_{m}^{n}
$$

at the fixed mesh point $\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$, tends to zero as the mesh is refined by letting $h, l \rightarrow 0$ simultaneously. In carrying out the convergence analysis, it may be
convenient to assume that $h$ and $l$ do not tend to zero independently but according to a relationship of the form

$$
l=r h^{\alpha}
$$

where $r$ is a constant and $\alpha \geq 1$ is some parameter.

## Chapter 2

## Third-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection Equation

### 2.1 Introduction

There are many finite-difference approximations which can be used to develop numerical methods for first-order hyperbolic partial differential equations of the type

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}+\lambda \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}=0, \quad \lambda>0, \tag{2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with appropriate initial and boundary conditions specified. For example, central-difference approximations for $u_{t}$ and $u_{x}$, or alternatively a forwarddifference approximation for $u_{x}$ and a central-difference approximation for $u_{t}$,etc, can be used. But in this chapter only the space derivative in the partial differential equation (2.1) is replaced by new third-order finite-difference approximations resulting in a system of first-order ordinary differential equations. The solution of this system satisfies a recurrence relation. The accuracy in time is controlled by choosing a third-order approximation (intro-
duced by Taj and Twizell [38]) to the matrix exponential function and afterwards a parallel algorithm is developed and tested on well-known problems with exact solutions are already known in the literature.

### 2.2 The Model Problem

A typical problem in applied mathematics consisting of the first-order hyperbolic partial differential equation is the advection equation. This initial/ boundary-value problem (IBVP) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}+\lambda \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}=0, \quad \lambda>0, x>0, \quad t>0 \tag{2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=f(t), \quad t>0 \tag{2.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=g(x), \quad x \geq 0 \tag{2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g(0)=f_{0}(0)$ and $g(x)$ is a given continuous function of $x$. There will exist a discontinuity between the initial-condition and the boundarycondition at origin if

$$
g(0) \neq f_{0}(0)
$$

### 2.3 The Method

Suppose that the solution $u(x, t)$ of $\{(2.2)-(2.4)\}$ is to be determined in some arbitrary region $R=[0 \leq x \leq X] \times[t>0]$. Dividing the interval $[0, X]$ into $N$ subintervals each of width $h$, so that $N h=X$, and the time variable
$t$ into time steps each of length $l$ gives a rectangular mesh of points with co-ordinates

$$
\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)=(m h, n l)
$$

( $m=0,1,2, \ldots, N$ and $n=0,1,2, \ldots$ ) covering the region $R=[0<x<$ $X] \times[t>0]$ and its boundary $\partial R$ consisting of the lines $x=0, x=X$ and $t=0$.

To approximate the space derivative in (2.2) to third-order accuracy at some general point $(x, t)$ of the mesh, assume that it may be replaced by the four-point formula

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{h}\{a u(x, t)+b u(x-h, t)+c u(x-2 h, t) \\
& +d u(x-3 h, t)\} \tag{2.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the terms $u(x-h, t), u(x-2 h, t)$ and $u(x-3 h, t)$ as Taylor series about $(x, t)$ in (2.5) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d) u(x, t) \\
& +(-b-2 c-3 d) h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(b+4 c+9 d) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-b-8 c-27 d) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(b+16 c+81 d) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{2.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3)$ in (2.6) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a+b+c+d=0 \\
& -b-2 c-3 d=1
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{array}{r}
b+4 c+9 d=0  \tag{2.7}\\
-b-8 c-27 d=0
\end{array}
$$

The solution of the linear system (2.7) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=\frac{11}{6}, \quad b=-3, \quad c=\frac{3}{2}, \quad d=\frac{-1}{3} . \tag{2.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{6 h}\{-2 u(x-3 h, t)+9 u(x-2 h, t)-18 u(x-h, t) \\
& +11 u(x, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.9}
\end{align*}
$$

is the desired third-order approximation to the first-order space derivative at $(x, t)$.

Equation (2.9) is valid only for $(x, t)=\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$ with $m=3,4, \ldots, N$. To attain the same accuracy at the end points $\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$ and ( $x_{2}, t_{n}$ ), special formulae must be developed which approximate $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ not only to thirdorder but also with dominant error term $\frac{1}{4} h^{3} \partial^{4} u(x, t) / \partial x^{4}$ for $x=x_{1}, x_{2}$ and $t=t_{n}$. To achieve both of these, five-point formulae will be needed in each case. Consider, then, the approximation to $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right):$ let

$$
\begin{align*}
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =a u(x-h, t)+b u(x, t)+c u(x+h, t) \\
& +d u(x+2 h, t)+e u(x+3 h, t)+\frac{3}{2} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{2.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Then expanding the terms $u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t), u(x+2 h, t)$ and $u(x+3 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}=(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +(-a+c+2 d+3 e) h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(a+c+4 d+9 e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-a+c+8 d+27 e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(a+c+16 d+81 e+36) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{2.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4)$ in (2.11) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a+b+c+d+e & =0 \\
-a+c+2 d+3 e & =6 \\
a+c+4 d+9 e & =0  \tag{2.12}\\
-a+c+8 d+27 e & =0 \\
a+c+16 d+81 e & =-36
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (2.12) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=-3, \quad b=1, \quad c=0, \quad d=3, \quad e=-1 \tag{2.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, at the mesh point $\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$, the desired third-order approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ with dominant error term $\frac{h^{3}}{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{1}}$ is

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{6 h}\{-3 u(x-h, t)+u(x, t)+3 u(x+2 h, t)-u(x+3 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{h^{3}}{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Suppose, now, that at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{2}, t_{n}\right)$ the approximation to the first-order space derivative $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =a u(x-2 h, t)+b u(x-h, t)+c u(x, t) \\
& +d u(x+h, t)+e u(x+2 h, t)+\frac{3}{2} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Then expanding the terms $u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t)$ and $u(x+2 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-2 a-b+d+2 e) h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(4 a+b+d+4 e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-8 a-b+d+8 e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(16 a+b+d+16 e+36) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) a s h \rightarrow 0 \tag{2.16}
\end{align*}
$$

and equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4)$ in (2.16) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a+b+c+d+e+f & =0, \\
-2 a-b+d+2 e & =6, \\
4 a+b+d+4 e & =0,  \tag{2.17}\\
-8 a-b+d+8 e & =0, \\
16 a+b+16 c+d+16 e & =-36 .
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (2.17) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=-1, \quad b=2, \quad c=-9, \quad d=10, \quad e=-2 \tag{2.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, at the mesh point $\left(x_{2}, t_{n}\right)$, the approximation to $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{6 h}\{-u(x-2 h, t)+2 u(x-h, t)-9 u(x, t)+10 u(x+h, t) \\
& -2 u(x+2 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \quad(2.19)
\end{aligned}
$$

Applying (2.2) with (2.9), (2.14) and (2.19) as appropriate to the $N$ mesh points of the grid at time level $t=t_{n}$ leads to the system of first-order
ordinary differential equations given in vector-matrix form by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathrm{U}(t)}{d t}=-\lambda A \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathbf{b}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{2.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{2.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $\mathrm{U}(t)=\left[U_{1}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T}, \mathbf{b}(t)=\frac{\lambda}{6 h}[3 f(t), f(t), 2 f(t), 0, \ldots, 0]^{T}$ $\mathbf{g}=\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T}, T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{1}{6 h}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrrr}
1 & 0 & 3 & -1 & & & \bigcirc  \tag{2.22}\\
2 & -9 & 10 & -2 & & & \\
9 & -18 & 11 & & & & \\
-2 & 9 & -18 & 11 & & & \\
& -2 & 9 & -18 & 11 & & \\
& & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\
\bigcirc & & & -2 & 9 & -18 & 11
\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

Solving (2.20) subject to (2.21) gives the solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t)=\exp (-\lambda t A) \mathbf{U}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \exp [-\lambda A(t-s)] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{2.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies the recurrence relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\exp (-\lambda l A) \mathrm{U}(t)+\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp [-\lambda A(t+l-s)] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{2.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

Approximating the matrix exponential function $\exp (-\lambda l A)$ in (2.24) by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (-\lambda l A)=D^{-1} N \tag{2.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left[I+a_{1} \lambda l A+a_{2} \lambda^{2} l^{2} A^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \lambda^{3} l^{3} A^{3}\right] \tag{2.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

is non-singular and

$$
\begin{equation*}
N=\left[I-\left(1-a_{1}\right) \lambda l A+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \lambda^{2} l^{2} A^{2}\right] \tag{2.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is analogous to (1.1) and the integral term by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{t}^{t+1} \exp (-\lambda(t+l-s) A) \mathbf{b}(s) d s=W_{1} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{1}\right)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{3}\right) \tag{2.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s_{1} \neq s_{2} \neq s_{3}$ and $W_{1}, W_{2}$ and $W_{3}$ are matrices, it can be shown that
(i) when $b(s)=[1,1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{1}+W_{2}+W_{3}=M_{1} \tag{2.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1}=-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I) \tag{2.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) when $b(s)=[s, s, s, \ldots, s]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1} W_{1}+s_{2} W_{2}+s_{3} W_{3}=M_{2} \tag{2.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{2}=-(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \tag{2.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

and
(iii) when $\mathrm{b}(\mathrm{s})=\left[s^{2}, s^{2}, \ldots, s^{2}\right]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1}^{2} W_{1}+s_{2}^{2} W_{2}+s_{3}^{2} W_{3}=M_{3} \tag{2.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{3} & =-(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\} \tag{2.34}
\end{align*}
$$

Solving (2.29), (2.31) and (2.33) simultaneously gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{1}=\frac{s_{3}-s_{2}}{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{2}-s_{3}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)}\left\{s_{2} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\} \tag{2.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{2}=\frac{s_{1}-s_{3}}{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{2}-s_{3}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)}\left\{s_{1} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{1}+s_{3}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\} \tag{2.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
W_{3}=\frac{s_{2}-s_{1}}{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{2}-s_{3}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)}\left\{s_{1} s_{2} M_{1}-\left(s_{1}+s_{2}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\}, \quad(2.37)
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
& W_{1}=\frac{-1}{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)}\left\{s_{2} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\}  \tag{2.38}\\
& W_{2}=\frac{-1}{\left(s_{1}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{2}-s_{3}\right)}\left\{s_{1} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\} \tag{2.39}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{3}=\frac{-1}{\left(s_{2}-s_{3}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)}\left\{s_{1} s_{2} M_{1}-\left(s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\} \tag{2.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Taking $s_{1}=t, s_{2}=t+\frac{l}{2}$ and $s_{3}=t+l$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& W_{1}=\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left\{\left(t^{2}+\frac{3}{2} l t+\frac{l^{2}}{2}\right) M_{1}-\left(2 t+\frac{3}{2} l\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\},  \tag{2.41}\\
& W_{2}=\frac{-4}{l^{2}}\left\{\left(t^{2}+l t\right) M_{1}-(2 t+l) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\}  \tag{2.42}\\
& W_{3}=\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left\{\left(t^{2}+\frac{l}{2} t\right) M_{1}-\left(2 t+\frac{l}{2}\right) M_{2}+M_{3}\right\} \tag{2.43}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (2.30), (2.32) and (2.34) in (2.41), (2.42) and (2.43) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left[\left(t^{2}+\frac{3}{2} l t+\frac{l^{2}}{2}\right)(-\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right. \\
& -\left(2 t+\frac{3}{2} l\right)(-\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right],  \tag{2.44}\\
W_{2} & =\frac{-4}{l^{2}}\left[\left(t^{2}+l t\right)(-\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right. \\
& +(2 t+l)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right] \tag{2.45}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{3} & =\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left[\left(t^{2}+\frac{l}{2} t+\frac{l^{2}}{2}\right)(-\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right. \\
& +\left(2 t+\frac{l}{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right] \tag{2.46}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{3}\left[-\left(t^{2}+\frac{3}{2} l t+\frac{l^{2}}{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right. \\
& +\left(2 t+\frac{3}{2} l\right)(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t^{2} \exp (l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right],  \tag{2.47}\\
W_{2} & =\frac{-4}{l^{2}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{3}\left[-\left(t^{2}+l t\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right. \\
& +(2 t+l)(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t^{2} \exp (l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right] \tag{2.48}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{3} & =\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left(A^{-1}\right)^{3}\left[-\left(t^{2}+\frac{l}{2} t+\frac{l^{2}}{2}\right) A^{2}(\exp (l A)-I)\right. \\
& +\left(2 t+\frac{l}{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I-(\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{2}\left\{t^{2} \exp (l A)-(t+l)^{2} I-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(t+l) I\right. \\
& \left.\left.\left.-\lambda A)^{-1}(\exp (-\lambda l A)-I)\right\}\right\}\right] . \tag{2.49}
\end{align*}
$$

Then it is easy to show that

$$
W_{1}=\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{3}\left\{-\left(\frac{\lambda^{2} l^{2}}{2} A^{2}+\frac{3 \lambda l}{2} A+2 I\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right.
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.+\left(\frac{\lambda l}{2} A+2 I\right)\right\}  \tag{2.50}\\
W_{2} & =-\frac{4}{l^{2}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{3}\{(2 I+\lambda l A) \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& +(2 I-\lambda l A)\},  \tag{2.51}\\
W_{3} & =\frac{2}{l^{2}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{3}\left\{-\left(2 I+\frac{\lambda l}{2} A\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& \left.+\left(2 I-\frac{3 \lambda l}{2} A+\frac{\lambda^{2} l^{2}}{2} A^{2}\right)\right\} . \tag{2.52}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (2.25) in (2.50)-(2.52) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& W_{1}=\frac{l}{6}\left\{\left(I-\left(4-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) \lambda l A\right\} D^{-1}\right.  \tag{2.53}\\
& W_{2}=\frac{2 l}{3}\left\{\left(I+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) \lambda l A\right\} D^{-1}\right. \tag{2.54}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{3}=\frac{l}{6}\left\{\left(I-\left(3-9 a_{1}+12 a_{3}\right) \lambda l A+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) \lambda^{2} l^{2} A^{2}\right\} D^{-1}\right. \tag{2.55}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence (2.24) can be written as

$$
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\exp (-\lambda l A) \mathbf{U}(t)+W_{1} \mathbf{b}(t)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}(t+l) .(2.56)
$$

### 2.4 Algorithm

Assuming that $r_{1}, r_{2}$ and $r_{3}$ are the real zeros of

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(\theta)=1+a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{3} \tag{2.57}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $D$ given by (2.26) can be factorized as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right) \tag{2.58}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then (2.56) can be written in partial fraction form as

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l) & =\left\{c_{11}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{12}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{13}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{U}(t) \\
& +\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{21}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{22}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{23}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathrm{b}(t) \\
& +\frac{2 l}{3}\left\{c_{31}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{32}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{33}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\
& +\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{41}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{42}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{43}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathrm{b}(t+l) \tag{2.59}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gathered}
c_{1 j}=\frac{1-\left(1-a_{1}\right) r_{j}+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) r_{j}^{2}}{\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\frac{r_{2}}{r_{1}}\right)}, j=1,2,3, \\
i \neq j \\
c_{2 j}=\frac{1-\left(4-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) r_{j}}{\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\frac{r_{2}}{r_{1}}\right)}, j=1,2,3, \\
i \neq j \\
c_{3 j}=\frac{1+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) r_{j}}{\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{1}}\right)}, j=1,2,3 \\
i \neq j
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
c_{4 j}=\frac{1-\left(3-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) r_{j}+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) r_{j}^{2}}{\prod_{\substack{3 \\ i \neq 1 \\ i \neq j}}^{\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{1}}\right)}}, j=1,2,3 .
$$

so that

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l) & =A_{1}^{-1}\left\{c_{11} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{21} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{31} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{41} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \\
& +A_{2}^{-1}\left\{c_{12} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{22} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{32} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{42} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \\
& +A_{3}^{-1}\left\{c_{13} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{23} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{33} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{43} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \tag{2.60}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{i}=I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{i}} A, \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{2.61}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\sum_{i=1}^{3} A_{i}^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{i} \tag{2.62}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}=c_{c_{\mathbf{i}}} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{2 \mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}(t)+4 c_{3 \mathrm{i}} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{4} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right\}, \quad i=1,2,3 .
$$

Let

$$
A_{i}^{-1} z_{i}=y_{i}
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}+\mathbf{y}_{2}+\mathbf{y}_{3} \tag{2.63}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $\mathbf{y}_{1}, \mathbf{y}_{\mathbf{2}}$ and $\mathbf{y}_{\mathbf{3}}$ are the solutions of the systems

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{i} \mathbf{y}_{i}=\mathbf{z}_{\mathrm{i}}, \quad i=1,2,3 . \tag{2.64}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. This algorithm is presented in tabular form in Table 2.1.

### 2.5 Numerical Examples

In this section only a representative of many other methods based on (2.25) will be used. So taking

$$
a_{1}=\frac{65431}{50000}
$$

and

$$
a_{2}=\frac{171151}{300000}
$$

Taj and Twizell [38], which give a very small local truncation error, gives

$$
r_{1}=2.18837132239, \quad r_{2}=2.33987492248, \quad r_{3}=2.35690139372
$$

as the real zeros of (2.57). These values produce

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
c_{11}=-176.185066638, & c_{12}=2051.11129521, & c_{13}=-1873.92622858, \\
c_{21}=-224.317807049, & c_{22}=2358.75587416, & c_{23}=-2133.43806711, \\
c_{31}=-19.0008161810, & c_{32}=326.498892802, & c_{33}=-306.498076621, \\
c_{41}=-182.736963963, & c_{42}=1594.78928297, & c_{43}=-1411.05231901
\end{array}
$$

### 2.5.1 Example 1

Consider the one space variable partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{2.65}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=-\sin (2 k \pi t), \quad t>0 \tag{2.66}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k$ is a positive integer and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=\sin (2 k \pi x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{2.67}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sin \{2 k \pi(x-t)\} \tag{2.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Oliger [31]). The integer $k$ gives the number of complete waves in the interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$. Using the algorithm developed in section 2.4 with the information given at the beginning of this section, the problem $\{(2.65)-$ (2.67) $\}$ is solved for $h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ so that $r=8.0\left(r=\frac{l}{h}\right)$, using $k=2$ and 4 and compared with the results obtained by Arigu et al. [5] whose algorithm requires the use of complex arithmetic. The theoretical solutions
and the numerical solutions for $k=2$ and $k=4$ at time $t=0.5$ and $t=10.0$ respectively are depicted in Figure 2.1-2.4. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. The apparent decay in amplitude in Figure 2.4 is due to the build-up of round-off errors. Maximum errors at time $t=0.5,1.0$, $2.0,4.0,10.0$, are given in Table 2.2.

### 2.5.2 Example 2

Consider again the one space variable partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 . \tag{2.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=e^{-t}, \quad t>0 \tag{2.70}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=e^{x}, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{2.71}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=e^{x-t} \tag{2.72}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Arigu et al. [5]), which decays as time increases. Using once again the algorithm developed in Section 2.4 with the information given at the beginning of this section the problem $\{(2.69)-(2.71)\}$ is solved for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ and compared once again with the results obtained by Arigu et al. [5]. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. From Table 2.3 it is clear that accuracy of this method is much much better than
the $O\left(h^{2}+l^{4}\right)$ method of Arigu et al. From Table 2.4 it is also clear that the method is third-order at time $t=1.0$ and 10.0 because, as $h$ and $l$ are both successively halved, the errors decrease in magnitude by a factor of 8(approximately). Theoretical and numerical solutions at time $t=1.0,10.0$ are depicted in Figure 2.5-2.8. Maximum errors at time $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0$ and 10.0 are given in Table 2.3.

### 2.6 Non-linear Problem

Consider the first-order non-linear hyperbolic partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{1}{2} \frac{\partial u^{2}}{\partial x}=0, \quad, 0 \leq x \leq X, \quad t>0 \tag{2.73}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $u=u(x, t)$, which is ubiquitous in wave theory and in quantum mechanics, with the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=f(t), \quad t>0 \tag{2.74}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=g(x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq X \tag{2.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g(x)$ is a given continuous function of $x$. There will exist a discontinuity between the initial condition and the boundary condition at the origin if

$$
g(0) \neq f(0) .
$$

Equation (2.73) may be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+u \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad 0 \leq x \leq X, \quad t>0 \tag{2.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using the same discretization and finite-difference approximations as in the first-order linear case gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathbf{U}(t)}{d t}=A(\mathbf{U}(t)) \mathbf{U}(t)+\mathbf{b}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{2.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(0)=\mathrm{g} \tag{2.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{U}(t) & =\left[U_{1}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{b}(t) & =\frac{1}{6 h}\left[3 U_{1}(t) f(t), U_{2}(t) f(t), 2 U_{3}(t) f(t), 0, \ldots, 0\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{g} & =\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T},
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and
$A=A(U(t))=\frac{1}{6 h}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrr}-U_{1}(t) & 0 & -3 U_{1}(t) & U_{1}(t) & \bigcirc \\ -2 U_{2}(t) & 9 U_{2}(t) & -10 U_{2}(t) & 2 U_{2}(t) & \\ -9 U_{3}(t) & 18 U_{3}(t) & -11 U_{3}(t) & & \\ 2 U_{4}(t) & -9 U_{4}(t) & 18 U_{4}(t) & -11 U_{4}(t) & \\ \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\ O & 2 U_{N}(t) & -9 U_{N}(t) & 18 U_{N}(t) & -11 U_{N}(t)\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}$
Regarding this non-linear problem Algorithm 1 is modified and is given in tabular form as Algorithm 2 in Table 2.5.

By way of example, consider the problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial\left(\frac{1}{2} u^{2}\right)}{\partial x}=0, \quad, 0 \leq x \leq 1, \quad t>0 \tag{2.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+u \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad, 0 \leq x \leq 1, t>0 \tag{2.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the boundary condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{2.82}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=x, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{2.83}
\end{equation*}
$$

which has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\frac{x}{1+t} \tag{2.84}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see [17]). Using Algorithm 2 the problem $\{(2.81)-(2.83)\}$ is solved for $h=\frac{1}{10}$ and $r=1.0,2.0$, using 150,300 and 600 time-steps and compared with the results of the Lax-Wendroff $O\left(h^{2}+l^{3}\right)$ method [17]. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. The theoretical solution and the numerical solution at time $t=15.0$ are depicted in Figure 2.9 and Figure 2.10 respectively. Maximum errors which occured at $x=1.0$ are given in Table 2.6.

Table 2.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\begin{gathered} 1 \\ \text { Input } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \\ & c_{11}, c_{21}, c_{31}, c_{41} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \\ & c_{12}, c_{22}, c_{32}, c_{42} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \\ & c_{13}, c_{23}, c_{33}, c_{43} \end{aligned}$ |
| $2$ <br> Compute | $I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A$ |
| $3$ <br> Decompose | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\Lambda l}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ |
| 4 <br> Evaluate | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ |
| 5 <br> Using | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{1}(t)=\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{21} \mathbf{b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{31} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{41} b(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{2}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{22} \mathbf{b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{32} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{42} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{3}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{23} \mathrm{~b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{33} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{43} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 <br> Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} y_{1}(t) \\ & =c_{11} U(t)+w_{1}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} y_{2}(t) \\ & =c_{12} \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathbf{w}_{2}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} y_{3}(t) \\ & =c_{13} U(t)+w_{3}(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 7 | $\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{2}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{3}(t)$ |  |  |
| 8 | GO TO Step 4 for next time step |  |  |

Table 2.2: Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10$

| $t$ | 0.5 | 1.0 | 2.0 | 4.0 | 10.0 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $k=2$ | $-0.616 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $-0.110 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.110 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.110 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.110 \mathrm{D}-2$ |
| $*$ | $0.271 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $0.269 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $0.261 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $0.260 \mathrm{D}-2$ | - |
| $k=4$ | $-0.962 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.181 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $-0.181 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $-0.181 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $-0.181 \mathrm{D}-1$ |
| $*$ | - | - | - | - | $0.641 \mathrm{D}-1$ |

* Maximum absolute errors of Arigu et al.[5] $O\left(h^{2}+l^{3}\right)$ Method

Table 2.3: Maximum errors for Example 2 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10.0$

| $t$ | 0.5 | 1.0 | 2.0 | 4.0 | 10.0 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | $-0.394 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $-0.450 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $-0.165 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $-0.224 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $-0.555 \mathrm{D}-10$ |
| $*$ | - | - | $0.511 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $0.215 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.869 \mathrm{D}-6$ |

* Maximum absolute errors of Arigu et al.[5] $O\left(h^{2}+l^{4}\right)$ Method

Table 2.4: Maximum errors for Example 2 showing third-order accuracy.

| $h, l$ | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.025 | 0.0125 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $t=1.0$ | $-0.192 \mathrm{D}-03$ | $-0.236 \mathrm{D}-04$ | $-0.308 \mathrm{D}-05$ | $-0.423 \mathrm{D}-06$ |
| $t=10.0$ | $0.341 \mathrm{D}-05$ | $0.557 \mathrm{D}-06$ | $0.820 \mathrm{D}-07$ | $0.112 \mathrm{D}-07$ |

Table 2.5: Algorithm 2

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\stackrel{1}{\text { Input }}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, \mathbf{U}_{0} \\ & c_{11}, c_{21}, c_{31}, c_{41} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, \mathbf{U}_{0} \\ & c_{12}, c_{22}, c_{32}, c_{42} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, \mathrm{U}_{0} \\ & c_{13}, c_{23}, c_{33}, c_{43} \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 2 \\ \text { Update } \end{gathered}$ | A | A | A |
| $3$ <br> Compute | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda I}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A$ |
| 4 <br> Decompose | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{2}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ |
| Evaluate | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 <br> Using | $\begin{aligned} & w_{1}(t)=\frac{l}{8}\left(c_{21} b(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{31} b\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{41} b(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{2}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{22} b(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{32} b\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{42} b(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{3}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{23} b(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{33} b\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{43} b(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 7 \\ \text { Solve } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} y_{1}(t) \\ & =c_{11} U(t)+w_{1}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} y_{2}(t) \\ & =c_{12} U(t)+w_{2}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} y_{3}(t) \\ & =c_{13} \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathbf{w}_{3}(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 8 | $\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{2}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{3}(t)$ |  |  |
| 9 | GO TO Step 2 for next time step |  |  |

Table 2.6: Maximum errors for non-linear problem

| Time steps | $h$ | $r$ | Maximum absolute errors | $*$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 150 | 0.1 | 1 | $0.54 \mathrm{D}-03$ | $0.79 \mathrm{D}-03$ |
| 150 | 0.1 | 2 | $0.36 \mathrm{D}-03$ | $0.38 \mathrm{D}-03$ |
| 300 | 0.1 | 1 | $0.18 \mathrm{D}-03$ | $0.12 \mathrm{D}-02$ |
| 300 | 0.1 | 2 | $0.11 \mathrm{D}-03$ | $0.61 \mathrm{D}-03$ |
| 600 | 0.1 | 1 | $0.33 \mathrm{D}-04$ |  |
| 600 | 0.1 | 2 | $0.66 \mathrm{D}-05$ |  |

* Maximum absolute errors of Lax-Wendroff $O\left(h^{2}+l^{3}\right)$ Method [17](p. 426)


Figure 2.1: Theoretical solution of example 1 for $k=2$ at time $t=0.5$

Figure 2.2


Figure 2.2: Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=2, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=0.5$

Figure 2.3


Figure 2.3: Theoretical solution of example 1 for $k=4$ at time $t=10.0$

Figure 2.4


Figure 2.4: Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=4, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=10.0$


Figure 2.5: Theoretical solution of example 2 at time $t=1.0$


Figure 2.6: Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=1.0$

Figure 2.7


Figure 2.7: Theoretical solution of example 2 at time $t=10.0$

Figure 2.8


Figure 2.8: Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=10.0$

Figure 2.9


Figure 2.9: Theoretical solution of Non-Linear Problem at $t=15$.

Figure 2.10


Figure 2.10: Numerical solution of Non-Linear Problem using $h=0.1$ and $r=1.0$ at $t=15$.

## Chapter 3

## Fourth-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection Equation

To develop fourth-order numerical methods for first-order hyperbolic partial differential equations of the type (2.1) with appropriate initial and boundary conditions specified, the space derivative in the partial differential equation is replaced by new fourth-order finite-difference approximations resulting in a system of first-order ordinary differential equations the solution of which satisfies a recurrence relation. The accuracy in time is controlled by a fourthorder approximation to the matrix exponential function which is introduced by Taj and Twizell [39].

### 3.1 The Method

Assume that the combination

$$
a u(x-4 h, t)+b u(x-3 h, t)+c u(x-2 h, t)+d u(x-h, t)+e u(x, t)
$$

gives the fourth-order approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ at $(x, t)$. Then expanding the terms $u(x-4 h, t), u(x-3 h, t), u(x-2 h, t)$ and $u(x-h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a u(x-4 h, t)+b u(x-3 h, t) & +c u(x-2 h, t)+d u(x-h, t)+e u(x, t) \\
& =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-4 a-3 b-2 c-d) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(16 a+9 b+4 c+d) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-64 a-27 b-8 c-d) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(256 a+81 b+16 c+d) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{5!}(-1024 a-243 b-32 c-d) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.1}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,2,3,4)$ in (3.1) to zero and the power of $h$ to 1 gives

$$
\begin{array}{r}
e+d+c+b+a=0 \\
-d-2 c-3 b-4 a=1 \\
d+4 c+9 b+16 a=0  \tag{3.2}\\
-d-8 c-27 b-64 a=0 \\
d+16 c+81 b+256 a=0
\end{array}
$$

The solution of this linear system is

$$
a=\frac{1}{4}, \quad b=\frac{-4}{3}, \quad c=3, \quad d=-4, \quad e=\frac{25}{12} .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{4} u(x-4 h, t) & -\frac{4}{3} u(x-3 h, t)+3 u(x-2 h, t)-4 u(x-h, t)+\frac{25}{12} u(x, t) \\
& =h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}-\frac{1}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.3}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{12}\{3 u(x-4 h, t) & -16 u(x-3 h, t)+36 u(x-2 h, t)-48 u(x-h, t) \\
+25 u(x, t)\} & =h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}-\frac{1}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus the desired approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{3 u(x-4 h, t)-16 u(x-3 h, t) \\
& +36 u(x-2 h, t)-48 u(x-h, t)+25 u(x, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{5} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Equation (3.5) is valid only for $(x, t)=\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$ with $m=4,5, \ldots, N$. To attain the same accuracy at the end point $\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right),\left(x_{2}, t_{n}\right)$ and $\left(x_{3}, t_{n}\right)$ special formulae must be devolped which approximate $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ not only to fourth-order but also with dominant error term $\frac{1}{5} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{5}}$ for $x=x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}$ and $t=t_{n}$. Consider then the approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$; let

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =a u(x-h, t)+b u(x, t)+c u(x+h, t)+d u(x+2 h, t) \\
& +e u(x+3 h, t)+f u(x+4 h, t)+\frac{12}{5} h^{s} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Expending the terms $u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t), u(x+2 h, t), u(x+3 h, t)$ and $u(x+4 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e+f) u(x, t) \\
& +(-a+c+2 d+3 e+4 f) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}(a+c+4 d+9 e+16 f) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{6}(-a+c+8 d+27 e+64 f) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(a+c+16 d+81 e+256 f) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +\frac{1}{120}\left(-a+c+32 d+243 e+1024 f+\frac{12}{5}\right) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4,5)$ in (3.7) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
b+a+c+d+e+f & =0 \\
-a+c+2 d+3 e+4 f & =12 \\
a+c+4 d+9 e+16 f & =0  \tag{3.8}\\
-a+c+8 d+27 e+64 f & =0 \\
a+c+16 d+81 e+256 f & =0 \\
-a+c+32 d+243 e+1024 f & =-288
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (3.8) is

$$
a=0, \quad b=-25, \quad c=48, \quad d=-36, \quad e=16, \quad f=-3
$$

thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{-25 u(x, t)+48 u(x+h, t) \\
& -36 u(x+2 h, t)+16 u(x+3 h, t)-3 u(x+4 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{5} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Consider, now the approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{2}, t_{n}\right)$; let

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =a u(x-2 h, t)+b u(x-h, t)+c u(x, t)+d u(x+h, t) \\
& +c u(x+2 h, t)+f u(x+3 h, t)+\frac{12}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Expending the terms $u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t), u(x+2 h, t)$ and $u(x+3 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=(a+b+c+d+e+f) u(x, t)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +(-2 a-b+d+2 e+3 f) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}(4 a+b+d+4 e+9 f) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{6}(-8 a-b+d+8 e+27 f) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(16 a+b+d+16 e+81 f) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{120}\left(-32 a-b+d+32 e+243 f+\frac{12}{5}\right) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4,5)$ in (3.11) gives the system

$$
\begin{align*}
c+b+a+d+e+f & =0 \\
-b-2 a+d+2 e+3 f & =12 \\
b+4 a+d+4 e+9 f & =0  \tag{3.12}\\
-b-8 a+d+8 e+27 f & =0 \\
b+16 a+d+16 e+81 f & =0 \\
-b-32 a+d+32 e+243 f & =-288
\end{align*}
$$

which has solution

$$
a=3, \quad b=-18, \quad c=20, \quad d=-12, \quad e=9, \quad f=-2
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{3 u(x-2 h, t)-18 u(x-h, t) \\
& +20 u(x, t)-12 u(x+h, t)+9 u(x+2 h, t)-2 u(x+3 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{5} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.13}
\end{align*}
$$

is the desired fourth-order approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ with dominant error term $\frac{h^{4}}{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}}$ at the point $\left(x_{2}, t_{n}\right)$.

Consider, next the approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{3}, t_{n}\right)$; let

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =a u(x-3 h, t)+b u(x-2 h, t)+c u(x-h, t)+d u(x, t) \\
& +e u(x+h, t)+\int u(x+2 h, t)+\frac{12}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{3.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the terms $u(x-3 h, t), u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t)$ and $u(x+2 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e+f) u(x, t) \\
& +(-3 a-2 b-c+e+2 f) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}(9 a+4 b+c+e+4 f) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{6}(-27 a-8 b-c+e+8 f) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(81 a+16 b+c+e+16 f) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{120}\left(-243 a-32 b-c+e+32 f+\frac{12}{5}\right) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.15}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4,5)$ in (3.15) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
d+e+c+b+a+f & =0 \\
e-c-2 b-3 a+2 f & =12 \\
e+c+4 b+9 a+4 f & =0  \tag{3.16}\\
e-c-8 b-27 a+8 f & =0 \\
e+c+16 b+81 a+16 f & =0 \\
e-c-32 b-243 a+32 f & =-288
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (3.16) is

$$
a=2, \quad b=-9, \quad c=12, \quad d=-20, \quad e=18, \quad f=-3 .
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{2 u(x-3 h, t)-9 u(x-2 h, t) \\
& +12 u(x-h, t)-20 u(x, t)+18 u(x+h, t)-3 u(x+2 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{5} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{3.17}
\end{align*}
$$

is the desired approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, 1)}{\partial x}$ at the point $\left(x_{3}, t_{n}\right)$.

Applying (2.2) with (3.5) or (3.9) or (3.13) or (3.17) as appropriate to the N mesh points at the time level $t=n l$, leads to the system of first-order ordinary differential equations given in vector-matrix form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathrm{U}(t)}{d t}=-\lambda A \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathrm{b}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(t) & =\left[U_{1}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{b}(t) & =\frac{\lambda}{12 h}[0,-3 f(t),-2 f(t),-3 f(t), 0, \ldots, 0]^{T} \\
\mathbf{g} & =\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T}
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{1}{12 h}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrrrr}
-25 & 48 & -36 & 16 & -3 & & & \bigcirc  \tag{3.20}\\
-18 & 20 & -12 & 9 & -2 & & & \\
-9 & 12 & -20 & 18 & -3 & & & \\
-16 & 36 & -48 & 25 & 0 & & & \\
3 & -16 & 36 & -48 & 25 & & & \\
& 3 & -16 & 36 & -48 & 25 & & \\
& & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\
\bigcirc & & & 3 & -16 & 36 & -48 & 25
\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

It is observed that the matrix $A$ has distinct eigenvalues with negative real parts for $N=7,9,19$ and 39 given in Appendix A.

Solving (3.18) subject to (3.19) gives the solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t)=\exp (-\lambda t A) \mathbf{U}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \exp [-\lambda A(t-s)] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{3.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies the recurrence relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\exp (-\lambda l A) \mathrm{U}(t)+\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp [-\lambda A(t+l-s)] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{3.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

Approximating the matrix exponential function $\exp (-\lambda l A)$ in (3.22) by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (-\lambda l A)=D^{-1} N \tag{3.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
D=I+a_{1} \lambda l A+a_{2} \lambda^{2} l^{2} A^{2}+a_{3} \lambda^{3} l^{3} A^{3}+\left(\frac{-1}{24}+\frac{1}{6} a_{1}-\frac{1}{2} a_{2}+a_{3}\right) \lambda^{4} l^{4} A^{4} \text { ( 3.24) }
$$

is non-singular and

$$
N=I-\left(1-a_{1}\right) \lambda l A+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \lambda^{2} l^{2} A^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}+a_{2}-a_{3}\right) \lambda^{3} l^{3} A^{3}(3.25)
$$

which is analogous to (1.2) and the integral term by
$\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp (-\lambda(t+l-s) A) \mathrm{b}(s) d s=W_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(s_{1}\right)+W_{2} \mathrm{~b}\left(s_{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathrm{~b}\left(s_{3}\right)+W_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(s_{4}\right)$
where $s_{1} \neq s_{2} \neq s_{3} \neq s_{1}$ and $W_{1}, W_{2}, W_{3}$ and $W_{4}$ are matrices, it can be shown that
(i) when $\mathrm{b}(\mathrm{s})=[1,1,1, \ldots, 1]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
W_{1}+W_{2}+W_{3}+W_{1}=M_{1} \tag{3.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{1}=(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda \mid A)) \tag{3.28}
\end{equation*}
$$

(ii) when $\mathrm{b}(s)=[s, s, s, \ldots, s]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1} W_{1}+s_{2} W_{2}+s_{3} W_{3}+s_{4} W_{4}=M_{2} \tag{3.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{2}=(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\} \tag{3.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

(iii) when $b(s)=\left[s^{2}, s^{2}, \ldots, s^{2}\right\}^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1}^{2} W_{1}+s_{2}^{2} W_{2}+s_{3}^{2} W_{3}+s_{4}^{2} W_{4}=M_{3} \tag{3.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{3} & =(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)-2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\} \tag{3.32}
\end{align*}
$$

and
(iv) when $b(s)=\left[s^{3}, s^{3}, \ldots, s^{3}\right]^{T}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
s_{1}^{3} W_{1}+s_{2}^{3} W_{2}+s_{3}^{3} W_{3}+s_{4}^{3} W_{4}=M_{4} \tag{3.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
M_{4} & =(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -3(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (l A) \\
& \left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\}\right\} . \tag{3.34}
\end{align*}
$$

Solving (3.27), (3.29), (3.31) and (3.33) simultaneously gives

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\left[\frac{\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{2} s_{3} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{2} s_{3}+s_{2} s_{4}+s_{3} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{2}+s_{3}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right] \tag{3.35}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{2} & =\left[\frac{\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{3} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{3}+s_{1} s_{4}+s_{3} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{3}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right] \tag{3.36}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{3} & =\left[\frac{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{2} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{2}+s_{1} s_{4}+s_{2} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{2}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right],
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{4} & =\left[\frac{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right]  \tag{3.37}\\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{2} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{2}+s_{2} s_{3}+s_{1} s_{3}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right], \tag{3.38}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{1} & =\left[\frac{1}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{2} s_{3} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{2} s_{3}+s_{2} s_{4}+s_{3} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{2}+s_{3}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{2} & =\left[\frac{1}{\left(s_{2}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{3} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{3}+s_{1} s_{4}+s_{3} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{3}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right] \tag{3.40}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{3} & =\left[\frac{1}{\left(s_{3}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{3}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{2} s_{4} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{2}+s_{1} s_{4}+s_{2} s_{4}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{2}+s_{4}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right]
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{4} & =\left[\frac{1}{\left(s_{4}-s_{1}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{2}\right)\left(s_{4}-s_{3}\right)}\right] \\
& \times\left[s_{1} s_{2} s_{3} M_{1}-\left(s_{1} s_{2}+s_{2} s_{3}+s_{1} s_{3}\right) M_{2}+\left(s_{1}+s_{2}+s_{3}\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right] \tag{3.42}
\end{align*}
$$

Taking $s_{1}=t, s_{2}=t+\frac{l}{2}, s_{3}=t+\frac{2}{3} l$ and $s_{4}=t+l$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left\{\left(t^{3}+2 l t^{2}+\frac{11}{9} l^{2} t+\frac{2}{9} l^{3}\right) M_{1}-\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right) M_{2}\right. \\
& \left.+(3 t+2 l) M_{3}-M_{4}\right\}  \tag{3.43}\\
W_{2} & =-\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left\{\left(t^{3}+\frac{5}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{2}{3} l^{2} t\right) M_{1}-\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right) M_{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right\},  \tag{3.44}\\
W_{3} & =\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left\{\left(t^{3}+\frac{4}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{1}{3} l^{2} t\right) M_{1}-\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right) M_{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right) M_{3}-M_{4}\right\},  \tag{3.45}\\
W_{4} & =-\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left\{\left(t^{3}+l t^{2}+\frac{2}{9} l^{2} t\right) M_{1}-\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right) M_{2}\right. \\
& \left.+(3 t+l) M_{3}-M_{4}\right\} . \tag{3.46}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (3.28), (3.30), (3.32) and (3.34) in (3.43)- (3.46) simultaneously gives

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1}= & \frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left[\left(t^{3}+2 l t^{2}+\frac{11}{9} l^{2} t+\frac{2}{9} l^{3}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
- & \left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\} \\
+ & (3 t+2 l)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\} \\
- & (\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -3(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.\left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\}\right\}\right]  \tag{3.47}\\
W_{2}= & -\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left[\left(t^{3}+\frac{5}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{2}{3} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
- & \left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& \left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\} \\
& +\quad\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\} \\
& -\quad(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -3(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.\left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\}\right\}\right] \text {, } \\
& W_{3}=\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left[\left(t^{3}+\frac{4}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{1}{3} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\} \\
& +\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda(A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\} \\
& -(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -3(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.\left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda \mid A))\right\}\right\}\right\}\right] \text {, } \\
& W_{4}=-\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left[\left(t^{3}+l t^{2}+\frac{2}{9} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\quad\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\} \\
& +(3 t+l)(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda \mid A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A))
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\} \\
- & (\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -3(\lambda A)^{-1}\left\{(t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right. \\
& -2(\lambda A)^{-1}\{(t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A) \\
& \left.\left.\left.\left.-(\lambda A)^{-1}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right\}\right\}\right\}\right], \tag{3.50}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left[\left(t^{3}+2 l t^{2}+\frac{11}{9} l^{2} t+\frac{2}{9} l^{3}\right)(\lambda A)^{3}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{3}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +(3 t+2 l)(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -2(3 t+2 l)(\lambda A)^{2}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +2(3 t+2 l)(\lambda A)(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& -(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& +3(\lambda A)^{2}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -6(\lambda A)((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +6(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))] \tag{3.51}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{2} & \left.=-\frac{27}{2 l^{3}} l(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left[\left(t^{3}+\frac{5}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{2}{3} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{3}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{3}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -2\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{2}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +2\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& -(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& +3(\lambda A)^{2}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -6(\lambda A)((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +6(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))] \tag{3.52}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{3} & \left.=\frac{27}{2 l^{3}} l(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left[\left(t^{3}+\frac{4}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{1}{3} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{3}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{3}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -2\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)^{2}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +2\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(\lambda A)(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& -(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& +3(\lambda A)^{2}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -6(\lambda A)((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +6(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))] \tag{3.53}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
W_{4} & =-\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left[\left(t^{3}+l t^{2}+\frac{2}{9} l^{2} t\right)(\lambda A)^{3}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))\right. \\
& -\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{3}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)(\lambda A)^{2}(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +(3 t+l)(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& -2(3 t+l)(\lambda A)^{2}((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +2(3 t+l)(\lambda A)(I-\exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& -(\lambda A)^{3}\left((t+l)^{3} I-t^{3} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right) \\
& +3(\lambda A)^{2}\left((t+l)^{2} I-t^{2} \exp (-\lambda l A)\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& -6(\lambda A)((t+l) I-t \exp (-\lambda l A)) \\
& +6(I-\exp (-\lambda l A))] \tag{3.54}
\end{align*}
$$

Simplification gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& W_{1}=\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{4}\left[\left\{t^{3}+2 l t^{2}+\frac{11}{9} l^{2} t+\frac{2}{9} l^{3}-(t+l)\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.+(3 t+2 l)(t+l)^{2}-(t+l)^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
& +\left\{3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}-2(3 t+2 l)(t+l)+3(t+l)^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
& +\{2(3 t+2 l)-6(t+l)\}(\lambda A)+6 I \\
& +\left\{\left\{-\left(t^{3}+2 l t^{2}+\frac{11}{9} l^{2} t+\frac{2}{9} l^{3}\right)+t\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.-(3 t+2 l) t^{2}+t^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
& +\left\{-\left(3 t^{2}+4 l t+\frac{11}{9} l^{2}\right)+2 t(3 t+2 l)-3 t^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
& +\{-2(3 t+2 l)+6 t)\}(\lambda A)-6 I\} \exp (-\lambda A)],  \tag{3.55}\\
& W_{2}=-\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{4}\left[\left\{t^{3}+\frac{5}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{2}{3} l^{2} t-(t+l)\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(t+l)^{2}-(t+l)^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
& +\left\{3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}-2\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)(t+l)+3(t+l)^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
& +\left\{2\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)-6(t+l)\right\}(\lambda A)+6 l \\
& +\left\{\left\{-\left(t^{3}+\frac{5}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{2}{3} l^{2} t\right)+t\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.-\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right) t^{2}+t^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
& +\left\{-\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{10}{3} l t+\frac{2}{3} l^{2}\right)+2 t\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)-3 t^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
& \left.\left.\left.+\left\{-2\left(3 t+\frac{5}{3} l\right)+6 t\right)\right\}(\lambda A)-6 I\right\} \exp (-\lambda A)\right] \text {, }  \tag{3.56}\\
& W_{3}=\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{4}\left[\left\{t^{3}+\frac{4}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{1}{3} l^{2} t-(t+l)\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(t+l)^{2}-(t+l)^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
+ & \left\{3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}-2\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)(t+l)+3(t+l)^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
+ & \left\{2\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)-6(t+l)\right\}(\lambda A)+6 I \\
+ & \left\{\left\{-\left(t^{3}+\frac{4}{3} l t^{2}+\frac{1}{3} l^{2} t\right)+t\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.-\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right) t^{2}+t^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
+ & \left\{-\left(3 t^{2}+\frac{8}{3} l t+\frac{1}{3} l^{2}\right)+2 t\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)-3 t^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
+ & \left.\left.\left.\left\{-2\left(3 t+\frac{4}{3} l\right)+6 t\right)\right\}(\lambda A)-6 I\right\} \exp (-\lambda A)\right],  \tag{3.57}\\
W_{4}= & -\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left((\lambda A)^{-1}\right)^{4}\left[\left\{t^{3}+l t^{2}+\frac{2}{9} l^{2} t-(t+l)\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.+(3 t+l)(t+l)^{2}-(t+l)^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
+ & \left\{3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}-2(3 t+l)(t+l)+3(t+l)^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
+ & \{2(3 t+l)-6(t+l)\}(\lambda A)+6 I \\
+ & \left\{\left\{-\left(t^{3}+l t^{2}+\frac{2}{9} l^{2} t\right)+t\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.-(3 t+l) t^{2}+t^{3}\right\}(\lambda A)^{3} \\
+ & \left\{-\left(3 t^{2}+2 l t+\frac{2}{9} l^{2}\right)+2 t(3 t+l)-3 t^{2}\right\}(\lambda A)^{2} \\
+ & \{-2(3 t+l)+6 t)\}(\lambda A)-6 I\} \exp (-\lambda A)] . \tag{3.58}
\end{align*}
$$

Then it is easy to show that

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{9}{2 l^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left\{6 I-2 \lambda l A+\frac{2}{9}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right. \\
& \left.-\left(6 I+4 \lambda l A+\frac{11}{9}(\lambda l A)^{2}+\frac{2}{9}(\lambda l A)^{3}\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right\},(  \tag{3.59}\\
W_{2} & =-\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left\{6 I-\frac{8}{3} \lambda l A+\frac{1}{3}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right. \\
& \left.-\left(6 I+\frac{10}{3} \lambda l A+\frac{2}{3}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right\}  \tag{3.60}\\
W_{3} & =\frac{27}{2 l^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left\{6 I-\frac{10}{3} \lambda l A+\frac{2}{3}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right. \\
& \left.-\left(6 I+\frac{8}{3} \lambda l A+\frac{1}{3}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right\} \tag{3.61}
\end{align*}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{4} & =-\frac{9}{22^{3}}\left[(\lambda A)^{-1}\right]^{4}\left\{6 I-4 \lambda l A+\frac{11}{9}(\lambda l A)^{2}-\frac{2}{9}(\lambda l A)^{3}\right. \\
& \left.-\left(6 I+2 \lambda l A+\frac{2}{9}(\lambda l A)^{2}\right) \exp (-\lambda l A)\right\} . \tag{3.62}
\end{align*}
$$

Using (3.23) in (3.59) -(3.62) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1}= & \frac{l}{24}\left\{\left(3 I-\left(-19+78 a_{1}-216 a_{2}+324 a_{3}\right) \lambda l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3-8 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right)(\lambda l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1},  \tag{3.63}\\
W_{2}= & \frac{3}{16} l\left\{\left(2 I+\left(-16+56 a_{1}-144 a_{2}+216 a_{3}\right) \lambda l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3}\right)(\lambda l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1},  \tag{3.64}\\
W_{3}= & \frac{3}{8} l\left\{\left(I+\left(7-26 a_{1}+72 a_{2}-108 a_{3}\right) \lambda l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.-\left(1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3}\right)(\lambda l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1},  \tag{3.65}\\
W_{4}= & \frac{l}{48} l\left\{\left(6 I-\left(44-168 a_{1}+432 a_{2}-648 a_{3}\right) \lambda l A\right.\right. \\
& +\left(11-44 a_{1}+132 a_{2}-216 a_{3}\right)(\lambda l A)^{2} \\
& \left.-\left(2-8 a_{1}+24 a_{2}-48 a_{3}\right)(\lambda l A)^{3}\right\} D^{-1} . \tag{3.66}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence (3.22) can be written as
$\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\exp (-\lambda l A) \mathbf{U}(t)+W_{1} \mathbf{b}(t)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+W_{1} \mathbf{b}(t+l)$.
(3.67)

### 3.2 Algorithm

Assuming that $r_{1}, r_{2}, r_{3}$ and $r_{4}$ are the real zeros of

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(\theta)=1+a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}+a_{3} \theta^{3}+\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right) \theta^{4} \tag{3.68}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $D$ given by (3.24) can be factorized as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right), \tag{3.69}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then (3.67) can be written in partial-fraction form as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)= & \left\{A_{1}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+A_{2}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+A_{3}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+A_{4}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{U}(t) \\
+ & \frac{l}{24}\left\{B_{1}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+B_{2}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+B_{3}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+B_{4}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}(t) \\
+ & \frac{3}{16} l\left\{C_{1}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+C_{2}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+C_{3}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+C_{4}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\
+ & \frac{3}{8} l\left\{D_{1}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+D_{2}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+D_{3}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+D_{4}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right) \\
+ & \frac{l}{48}\left\{E_{1}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+E_{2}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+E_{3}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+E_{4}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}(t+l)(3.70)
\end{aligned}
$$

in which, for $i=1,2,3,4$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{i}=\frac{1-p_{1} r_{i}+p_{2} r_{i}^{2}-p_{3} r_{i}^{3}}{\prod_{j=1}^{1}{ }_{j=1}^{\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{j}}\right)},} \\
& j \neq i \\
& B_{i}=\frac{3-p_{4} r_{i}+p_{5} r_{i}^{2}}{\prod_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{r}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& C_{i}=\frac{2-p_{6} r_{i}+p_{7} r_{i}^{2}}{\prod_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{r}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& D_{i}=\frac{1-p_{8} r_{i}-p_{9} r_{i}^{2}}{\prod_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
E_{i}=\frac{6-p_{10} r_{i}+p_{11} r_{i}^{2}-p_{12} r_{i}^{3}}{\prod_{\substack{4 \\ j \neq 1}}\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{j}}\right)}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& p_{1}=1-a_{1} \\
& p_{2}=\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2} \\
& p_{3}=\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}-a_{3} \\
& p_{4}=-19+78 a_{1}-216 a_{2}+324 a_{3} \\
& p_{5}=3-8 a_{1}+12 a_{2} \\
& p_{6}=16-56 a_{1}+144 a_{2}-216 a_{3} \\
& p_{7}=1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3} \\
& p_{8}=-7+26 a_{1}-72 a_{2}+108 a_{3} \\
& p_{9}=1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3} \\
& p_{10}=44-168 a_{1}+432 a_{2}-648 a_{3} \\
& p_{11}=11-44 a_{1}+132 a_{2}-216 a_{3} \\
& p_{12}=2-8 a_{1}+24 a_{2}-48 a_{3} .
\end{aligned}
$$

Then

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)= & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{1} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{1} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{1} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{2} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{2} \mathbf{b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{2} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{2} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{3} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{3} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right.
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{3} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{3} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{4} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{4} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{4} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
+ & \left.\left.\frac{3}{8} l D_{4} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{4} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \tag{3.71}
\end{align*}
$$

which gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l) & =\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1} z_{1}+\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1} z_{2} \\
& +\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1} z_{3}+\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1} z_{4} \tag{3.72}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{z}_{i} & =A_{\mathbf{i}} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{\mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} I C_{i} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{\mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{\mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right) \quad i=1,2,3,4
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} \lambda l A\right)^{-1} z_{i}=y_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} \lambda l A\right) \mathbf{y}_{i}=z_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{3.73}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
U(t+l)=y_{1}+y_{2}+y_{3}+y_{4} \tag{3.74}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $y_{1}, y_{2}, y_{3}$ and $y_{4}$ are the solutions of the systems

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} \lambda l A\right) y_{i}=z_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{3.75}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. This algorithm is presented in tabular form in Table 3.1.

### 3.3 Numerical Examples

In this section a representative of many other methods based on (3.23) will be used. So taking

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{1}=\frac{64}{25} \\
& a_{2}=\frac{7}{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
a_{3}=\frac{547}{600}
$$

Taj and Twizell [39], which give a small local trunction error, it is found that

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
r_{1}=-0.937580908085238, & r_{2}=-1.81471985800593 \\
r_{3}=-2.00000000000000, & r_{4}=-2.26051974672921
\end{array}
$$

are the real zeros of (3.24). These values produce

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
A_{1}=0.211455566708523, & A_{2}=-53.3503067445635, \\
A_{3}=108.000000000009, & A_{1}=-53.8611488221542, \\
B_{1}=-92.8251781374359, & B_{2}=764.030220887627, \\
B_{3}=-810.000000000074, & B_{4}=141.794957249882, \\
C_{1}=68.1850562754185, & C_{2}=-760.226330382964, \\
C_{3}=972.000000000087, & C_{4}=-277.958725892541, \\
D_{1}=-37.3634484931730, & D_{2}=399.961234456715, \\
D_{3}=-486.000000000044, & D_{4}=124.402214036502, \\
E_{1}=255.352513419023, & E_{2}=-3296.46069786871, \\
E_{3}=4212.00000000038, & E_{4}=-1164.89181555069
\end{array}
$$

### 3.3.1 Example 1

Consider the one space variable partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{3.76}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=-\sin (2 k \pi t), \quad t>0 \tag{3.77}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $k$ is a positive integer and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=\sin (2 k \pi x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{3.78}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sin [2 k \pi(x-t)] \tag{3.79}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Oliger [31]). The integer $\boldsymbol{k}$ gives the number of complete waves in the interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$. Using the Algorithm 1 with the information given at the beginning of this section the problem $\{(3.76)-(3.78)\}$ is solved for $h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ so that $r=8.0\left(r=\frac{l}{h}\right)$, using $k=2$ and 4 and compared with the results obtained by Arigu et al. [5] whose method requires the use of complex arithmatic. The numerical solutions for $k=2$ and $k=4$ at time $t=1.0$ and $t=10.0$ respectively are depicted in Figure 3.1 and Figure 3.2. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no oscillations are observed. Maximum errors at time $t=0.5$, 1.0, 2.0, 4.0, 10.0, are given in Table 3.2.

### 3.3.2 Example 2

Consider again the one space variable partial differential equation (3.2)

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=0, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{3.80}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=e^{-t}, \quad t>0 \tag{3.81}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=e^{x}, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{3.82}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=e^{x-t} \tag{3.83}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Arigu et al. [5]), which decays as time increases. Using once again the algorithm developed in Section 3.2 with the information given at the beginning of this section the problem $\{(3.80)-(3.82)\}$ is solved for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ and compared once again with the results obtained by Arigu et al. [5]. The numerical solutions at time $t=1.0$ and $t=10.0$ are depicted in Figure 3.3 and Figure 3.4 respectively. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. Maximum errors at time $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0$ and 10.0 are given in Table 3.3. In addition, the experiments are performed for $h, l=0.1,0.05$, $0.025,0.0125$ at time $t=1.0,10.0$ and it is noted from Table 3.4 that the method is fourth-order accurate for large values of $h$ and $l$ because, as $h$ and $l$ are both successively halved, the error decreases in magnitude by a factor of 16 (approximately). However, the accuracy is affected for smaller values of $h$ and $l$ because so many arithmetic operations cause an accumulation of round-off error.

Table 3.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 | Processor 4 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\begin{gathered} 1 \\ \text { Input } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, \mathbf{U}_{0}, A, A_{1} \\ & B_{1}, C_{1}, D_{1}, E_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, \mathbf{U}_{0}, A, A_{2} \\ & B_{2}, C_{2}, D_{2}, E_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, U_{0}, A, A_{3} \\ & B_{3}, C_{3}, D_{3}, E_{3} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{4}, U_{0}, A, A_{4} \\ & B_{4}, C_{4}, D_{4}, E_{4} \end{aligned}$ |
| 2 Comp | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{3}} A$ | $I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{4}} A$ |
| 3 <br> Decom | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda I}{r_{2}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\lambda 1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{\Lambda l}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{4} U_{4} \end{aligned}$ |
| 4 <br> Comp | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{4}=\mathrm{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{1}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{3}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{4}=\mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{b}_{1}=\mathrm{b}(t) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{2}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{3}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{4}=\mathrm{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{4}=\mathrm{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 5 \\ \text { Using } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{1}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{1} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{1} b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{1} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{1} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{2}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{2} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{2} b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{2} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{2} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{3}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{3} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{3} b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{3} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{3} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & w_{4}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{4} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{4} l b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{4} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{4} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} y_{1}(t) \\ & =A_{1} U(t) \\ & +w_{1}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} \mathbf{y}_{2}(t) \\ & =A_{2} U(t) \\ & +W_{2}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} y_{3}(t) \\ & =A_{3} U(t) \\ & +w_{3}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{4} U_{4} y_{4}(t) \\ & =A_{4} U(t) \\ & +w_{4}(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 7 | $\mathbf{U}(t+l)=y_{1}(t)+y_{2}(t)+y_{3}(t)+y_{4}(t)$ |  |  |  |
| 8 | GO TO Step 4 for next time step |  |  |  |

Table 3.2: Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10$

| $t$ | 0.5 | 1.0 | 2.0 | 4.0 | 10.0 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $k=2$ | $-0.132 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.241 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.242 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.242 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.242 \mathrm{D}-3$ |
| $*$ | $0.271 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $0.269 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $0.261 \mathrm{D}-1$ | $0.260 \mathrm{D}-2$ | - |
| $k=4$ | $-0.395 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.693 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.693 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.693 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $-0.693 \mathrm{D}-2$ |
| $*$ | - | - | - | - | $0.641 \mathrm{D}-1$ |

* Maximum absolute errors of Arigu et al. $O\left(h^{2}+l^{3}\right)$ Method

Table 3.3: Maximum errors for Example 2 at $t=0.5,1.0,2.0,4.0,10.0$

| $t$ | 0.5 | 1.0 | 2.0 | 4.0 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $*$ | $0.41905 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $-0.28270 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $-0.57121 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $-0.43606 \mathrm{D}-9$ |
|  |  | $-0.14274 \mathrm{D}-11$ |  |  |

* Maximum absolute errors of Arigu et al. $O\left(h^{2}+l^{4}\right)$ Method

Table 3.4: Maximum errors showing fourth-order accuracy for Example 2 at $t=1.0$ and 10.0

| $h, l$ | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.025 | 0.0125 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $t=1.0$ | $-0.13664 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $-0.81996 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $-0.46864 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $-0.58554 \mathrm{D}-8$ |
| $t=10.0$ | $-0.17417 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $-0.99378 \mathrm{D}-10$ | $-0.61453 \mathrm{D}-11$ | $-0.99222 \mathrm{D}-12$ |

Figure 3.1


Figure 3.1: Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=2, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=0.5$

Figure 3.2


Figure 3.2: Numerical solution of example 1 for $k=4, h=\frac{1}{640}$ and $l=\frac{1}{80}$ at time $t=10.0$

Figure 3.3


Figure 3.3: Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time $t=1.0$

Figure 3.4


Figure 3.4: Numerical solution of example 2 for $h=\frac{1}{80}$ and $l=\frac{1}{120}$ at time
$t=10.0$

## Chapter 4

## Third-Order Methods for the Advection-Diffusion Equation

### 4.1 The Model Problem

A typical problem in applied mathematics is the advection-diffusion equation. This initial/ boundary-value problem (IBVP) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}+\alpha \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}=\beta \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}+f(x, t), \quad \alpha, \beta>0, \quad 0<x<X, \quad t>0 \tag{4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

with the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(0, t) & =h_{1}(t), & t>0  \tag{4.2}\\
u(X, t) & =h_{2}(t), & t>0 \tag{4.3}
\end{align*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
u(x, 0)=g(x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq X
$$

where $g(x)$ is a given continuous function of $x$ and $h_{1}(t), h_{2}(t)$ are given continuous functions of $t$.

### 4.2 The Method

Dividing the interval $[0, X]$ into $N+1$ subintervals each of width $h$, so that $(N+1) h=X$, and the time variable $t$ into time steps each of length $l$ gives a rectangular mesh of points with co-ordinates

$$
\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)=(m h, n l)
$$

( $m=0,1,2, \ldots, N+1$ and $n=0,1,2, \ldots$ ) covering the region $R=[0<x<$ $X] \times[t>0]$ and its boundary $\partial R$ consisting of the lines $x=0, x=X$ and $t=0$.

To approximate the first-order space derivative in (4.1) to third-order accuracy at some general point $(x, t)$ of the mesh, assume that it may be replaced by the four-point formula

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{h}\{a u(x-h, t)+b u(x, t)+c u(x+h, t) \\
& +d u(x+2 h, t)\} \tag{4.5}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the terms $u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t)$ and $u(x+2 h, t)$ as Taylor series about $(x, t)$ in (4.5) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d) u(x, t) \\
& +(-a+c+2 d) h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(a+c+4 d) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-a+c+8 d) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(a+c+16 d) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{4.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3)$ in (4.6) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a+b+c+d & =0 \\
-a+c+2 d & =1 \\
a+c+4 d & =0  \tag{4.7}\\
-a+c+8 d & =0
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (4.7) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=\frac{-1}{3}, \quad b=\frac{-1}{2}, \quad c=1, \quad d=\frac{-1}{6} . \tag{4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{6 h}\{-2 u(x-h, t)-3 u(x, t)+6 u(x+h, t) \\
& -u(x+2 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0(4.9)
\end{aligned}
$$

is the desired third-order approximation to the first-order space derivative at $(x, t)$.

Equation (4.9) is valid only for $(x, t)=\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$ with $m=1,2, \ldots, N-1$. To attain the same accuracy at the end point $\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$, a special formula must be developed which approximates $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ not only to third order but also with dominant error term $\frac{1}{12} h^{3} \partial^{4} u(x, t) / \partial x^{4}$ for $x=x_{N}$ and $t=t_{n}$. To achieve this, a five-point formula will be needed. Consider, then, the approximation to $\partial u(x, t) / \partial x$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$ let

$$
\begin{align*}
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =a u(x-3 h, t)+b u(x-2 h, t)+c u(x-h, t) \\
& +d u(x, t)+e u(x+h, t)+\frac{1}{2} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

Then expanding the terms $u(x-3 h, t), u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t)$ and $u(x+h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
6 h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-3 a-2 b-c+e) h \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(9 a++4 b+c+e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-27 a-8 b-c+e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(81 a++16 b+c+e-12) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4)$ in (4.11) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a+b+c+d+e & =0 \\
-3 a-2 b-c+e & =6, \\
9 a+4 b+c+e & =0  \tag{4.12}\\
-27 a-8 b-c+e & =0 \\
81 a+16 b+c+e & =-12
\end{align*}
$$

The solution of the linear system (4.12) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
a=-1, \quad b=5, \quad c=-12, \quad d=7, \quad e=1 \tag{4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, at the mesh point $\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$, the desired approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ is

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{6 h}\{-u(x-3 h, t)+5 u(x-2 h, t)-12 u(x-h, t)+7 u(x, t) \\
& +u(x+h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{4} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{4}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.14}
\end{align*}
$$

Third-order approximations to the second-order space derivative in (4.1) (introduced in [38]) are given by $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}=\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{11 u(x-h, t)-20 u(x, t)+6 u(x+h, t)+4 u(x+2 h, t)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
-u(x+3 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $(x, t)=\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right), \quad m=1,2, \ldots, N-2$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{u(x-3 h, t)-6 u(x-2 h, t)+26 u(x-h, t) \\
& -40 u(x, t)+21 u(x+h, t)-2 u(x+2 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.16}
\end{align*}
$$

for $(x, t)=\left(x_{N-1}, t_{n}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{2 u(x-4 h, t)-11 u(x-3 h, t)+24 u(x-2 h, t) \\
& -14 u(x-h, t)-10 u(x, t)+9 u(x+h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{4.17}
\end{align*}
$$

for $(x, t)=\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$.
Applying (4.1)-(4.4) with (4.9), (4.14), (4.15), (4.16) and (4.17) as appropriate to the $N$ mesh points of the grid at time level $t=t_{n}$ leads to the system of first-order ordinary differential equations given in vector-matrix form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathrm{U}(t)}{d t}=A \mathbf{U}(t)+\mathbf{b}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{4.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{4.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{U}(t)= & {\left[U_{1}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T} } \\
\mathbf{b}(t)= & {\left[f_{1}(t)+\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(4 \alpha h+11 \beta) h_{1}(t), f_{2}(t), f_{3}(t), \ldots, f_{N-3}(t)\right.} \\
& f_{N-2}(t)-\frac{\beta}{12 h^{2}} h_{2}(t), f_{N-1}(t)+\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(2 \alpha h-2 \beta) h_{2}(t) \\
& \left.f_{N}(t)+\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(-2 \alpha h+9 \beta) h_{2}(t)\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{g}= & {\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T} }
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\left[\begin{array}{cccccccc}
a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} & a_{5} & & & & \bigcirc  \tag{4.20}\\
a_{1} & a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} & a_{5} & & & \\
& a_{1} & a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} & a_{5} & & \\
& & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\
& & & a_{1} & a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} & a_{5} \\
& & & & a_{1} & a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} \\
& & & a_{6} & a_{7} & a_{8} & a_{9} & a_{10} \\
& & & a_{11} & a_{12} & a_{13} & a_{14} & a_{15}
\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
a_{1}=4 \alpha h+11 \beta, & a_{2}=4 \alpha h+11 \beta, & a_{3}=-12 \alpha h+6 \beta, \\
a_{4}=2 \alpha h+4 \beta, & a_{5}=-\beta, & a_{6}=\beta, \\
a_{7}=-6 \beta, & a_{8}=4 \alpha h+26 \beta, & a_{9}=6 \alpha h-40 \beta, \\
a_{10}=-12 \alpha h+21 \beta, & a_{11}=2 \beta, & a_{12}=2 \alpha h-11 \beta, \\
a_{13}=-10 \alpha h+24 \beta, & a_{14}=24 \alpha h-14 \beta, & a_{15}=-14 \alpha h-10 \beta .
\end{array}
$$

Solving (4.18) subject to (4.19) gives the solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t)=\exp (t A) \mathrm{U}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \exp [(t-s) A] \mathrm{b}(s) d s \tag{4.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies the recurrence relation

$$
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\exp (l A) \mathrm{U}(t)+\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp [(t+l-s) A] \mathbf{b}(s) d s
$$

Approximating the matrix exponential function $\exp (l A)$ in (4.22) by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l A)=D^{-1} N \tag{4.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=I-a_{1} l A+a_{2} l^{2} A^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}+a_{2}\right) l^{3} A^{3} \tag{4.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

is non-singular and

$$
\begin{equation*}
N=I+\left(1-a_{1}\right) l A+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) l^{2} A^{2} \tag{4.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in Chapter 2 and the integral term by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp ((t+l-s) A) \mathbf{b}(s) d s=W_{1} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{1}\right)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{3}\right) \tag{4.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s_{1} \neq s_{2} \neq s_{3}$ and $W_{1}, W_{2}$ and $W_{3}$ are matrices.

These matrices can be obtained by putting $\lambda=-1$ in (2.53)-(2.55) giving

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1} & =\frac{l}{6}\left\{\left(I+\left(4-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) l A\right\} D^{-1}\right.  \tag{4.27}\\
W_{2} & =\frac{2 l}{3}\left\{\left(I-\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) l A\right\} D^{-1}\right.  \tag{4.28}\\
W_{3} & =\frac{l}{6}\left\{\left(I+\left(3-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) l A+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) l^{2} A^{2}\right\} D^{-1}\right. \tag{4.29}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence (4.22) can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\exp (l A) \mathbf{U}(t)+W_{1} \mathbf{b}(t)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}(t+l) \tag{4.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 4.3 Algorithm

The algorithm is very similar to that given in Section 2.4 of Chapter 2 but it is included in the interests of completeness.

Assuming that $r_{1}, r_{2}$ and $r_{3}$ are the real zeros of

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(\theta)=1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{3} \tag{4.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $D$ given by (4.24) can be factorized as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right) \tag{4.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then (4.54) can be written in partial fraction form as
$\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\left\{c_{11}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{12}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{13}\left(I-\frac{\lambda l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{U}(t)$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{21}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{22}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{23}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}(t) \\
& +\frac{2 l}{3}\left\{c_{31}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{32}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{33}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\
& +\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{41}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{42}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}+c_{43}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}(t+l) \tag{4.33}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{gathered}
c_{1 j}=\frac{1+\left(1-a_{1}\right) r_{j}+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) r_{j}^{2}}{\prod_{i=1}^{3}\left(1-\frac{r_{2}}{r_{i}}\right)}, j=1,2,3, \\
c_{2 j}=\frac{1+\left(4-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) r_{j}}{\prod_{\substack{i=1 \\
i \neq j}}\left(1-\frac{r_{2}}{r_{i}}\right)}, j=1,2,3, \\
c_{3 j}=\frac{1-\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) r_{j}}{\prod_{\substack{3=1}}^{3}\left(1-\frac{r_{j}}{r_{i}}\right)}, j=1,2,3 \\
i \neq j
\end{gathered}
$$

and

$$
c_{4 j}=\frac{1+\left(3-9 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right) r_{j}+\left(1-3 a_{1}+6 a_{2}\right) r_{j}^{2}}{\prod_{\substack{i=1 \\ i \neq j}}^{\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{i}}\right)}}, j=1,2,3 .
$$

So that

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l) & =A_{1}^{-1}\left\{c_{11} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{21} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{31} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{41} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \\
& +A_{2}^{-1}\left\{c_{12} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{22} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{32} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{42} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \\
& +A_{3}^{-1}\left\{c_{13} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{23} \mathrm{~b}(t)+4 c_{33} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{43} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right\} \tag{4.34}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{i}=I-\frac{l}{r_{i}} A, \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{4.35}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\sum_{i=1}^{3} A_{i}^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{i} \tag{4.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\mathbf{z}_{i}=c_{1 i} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{6}\left\{c_{2 i} \mathbf{b}(t)+4 c_{3 i} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right)+c_{4 i} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right\}, \quad i=1,2,3
$$

Let

$$
A_{i}^{-1} z_{i}=y_{i}
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}+\mathbf{y}_{2}+\mathbf{y}_{3} \tag{4.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $y_{1}, \mathbf{y}_{2}$ and $y_{3}$ are the solutions of the systems

$$
\begin{equation*}
A_{i} \mathbf{y}_{i}=\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}}, \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{4.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. This algorithm is presented in tabular form in Table 4.1.

### 4.4 Numerical Example

In this section only a representative of many other methods based on (4.23) will be used. So taking

$$
a_{1}=\frac{65431}{50000}
$$

and

$$
a_{2}=\frac{171151}{300000},
$$

as in chapter 2, gives

$$
r_{1}=2.18837132239026, \quad r_{2}=2.33987492247039, \quad r_{3}=2.35690139372652
$$

as the real zeros of (4.55). These values produce

$$
c_{11}=-176.185066638, \quad c_{12}=2051.11129521, \quad c_{13}=-1873.92622858
$$

$$
\begin{array}{lll}
c_{21}=-224.317807049, & c_{22}=2358.75587416, & c_{23}=-2133.43806711, \\
c_{31}=-19.0008161810, & c_{32}=326.498892802, & c_{33}=-306.498076621 \\
c_{41}=-182.736963963, & c_{42}=1594.78928297, & c_{43}=-1411.05231901
\end{array}
$$

By the way of an example consider the one space variable partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+5 \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=\beta \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{4.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
& h_{1}(t)=u(0, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(2+5 t)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right), t>0  \tag{4.40}\\
& h_{2}(t)=u(1, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(1+5 t)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right), t>0 \tag{4.41}
\end{align*}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
g(x)=u(x, 0)=\exp \left(\frac{-(x-2)^{2}}{8}\right), t>0 \tag{4.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(x-2-5 t)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right) \tag{4.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Jain et al. [19]). Using the algorithm developed in Section 4.3 with the information given at the beginning of this section the problem $\{(4.63)-(4.66)\}$ was solved for $h=0.1,0.05,0.005,0.001$ and $l=0.1,0.05,0.005,0.001$ using $\beta=1000$. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. The maximum errors at time $t=0.5$ are observed at mid point of the region and are given in Table 4.2. For pictorial evidence of stability, accuracy and smoothness of the method the theoretical and numerical solutions for $h=0.1$ and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$ are depicted in Figure 4.1 and Figure 4.2 respectively.

Table 4.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\begin{gathered} 1 \\ \text { Input } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, \mathbf{U}_{0}, A \\ & c_{11}, c_{21}, c_{31}, c_{41} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, \mathbf{U}_{0}, A \\ & c_{12}, c_{22}, c_{32}, c_{42} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, U_{0}, A \\ & c_{13}, c_{23}, c_{33}, c_{43} \end{aligned}$ |
| $\overline{2}$ <br> Compute | $I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A$ |
| $3$ <br> Decompose | $I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A=L_{1} U_{1}$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} A=L_{2} U_{2}$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A=L_{3} U_{3}$ |
| $4$ <br> Evaluate | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}(t), \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ |
| 5 <br> Using | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{1}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{21} \mathbf{b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{31} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{41} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{2}(t)=\frac{l}{6}\left(c_{22} \mathbf{b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{32} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{42} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{3}(t)=\frac{1}{6}\left(c_{23} \mathrm{~b}(t)\right. \\ & +4 c_{33} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{1}{2}\right) \\ & \left.+c_{43} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right) \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} \mathbf{y}_{1}(t) \\ & =c_{11} \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathbf{w}_{1}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} \mathbf{y}_{2}(t) \\ & =c_{12} U(t)+\mathbf{w}_{2}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} \mathbf{y}_{3}(t) \\ & =c_{13} U(t)+w_{3}(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 7 | $\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{2}(t)+\mathbf{y}_{3}(t)$ |  |  |
| 8 | GO TO Step 4 for next time step |  |  |

Table 4.2: Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5$

| $h$ | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.005 | 0.001 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $l=0.1$ | $0.1270 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.1270 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.1270 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.1270 \mathrm{D}-6$ |
| $l=0.05$ | $0.2746 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $0.2746 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $0.2744 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $0.2747 \mathrm{D}-7$ |
| $l=0.005$ | $0.1192 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.1192 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.1182 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.1189 \mathrm{D}-8$ |
| $l=0.001$ | $0.4805 \mathrm{D}-9$ | $0.4806 \mathrm{D}-9$ | $0.4716 \mathrm{D}-9$ | $0.4752 \mathrm{D}-9$ |

Figure 4.1


Figure 4.1: Theoretical solution of example 1 for time $t=0.5$

Figure 4.2


Figure 4.2: Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$

## Chapter 5

## Fourth-Order Numerical Methods for the Advection-Diffusion Equation

To develop fourth-order numerical methods for advection-diffusion equations of the type (4.1) with appropriate initial and boundary conditions specified, the space derivatives in the partial differential equation are replaced by fourth-order finite-difference approximations resulting in a system of firstorder ordinary differential equations the solution of which satisfies a recurrence relation. The accuracy in time is controlled by a fourth-order approximation to the matrix exponential function as in Chapter 3.

### 5.1 The Method

Consider the advection-diffusion equation (4.1), mentioned here for convenience,

$$
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial t}+\alpha \frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}=\beta \frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}+f(x, t) ; \quad \alpha, \beta>0, \quad 0<x<X, \quad t>0
$$

with the boundary conditions

$$
\left.\begin{array}{l}
u(0, t)=f_{1}(t)  \tag{5.2}\\
u(1, t)=f_{2}(t)
\end{array}\right\}, \quad t>0
$$

in which $f_{1}(t), f_{2}(t)$ are given continuous functions of $t$ and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, 0)=g(x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq X \tag{5.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $g(x)$ is a given continuous functions of $x$. For a positive integer $N$, let $h=\frac{X}{N+1}$. Considering the discretization of the region $R=[0<$ $x<X] \times[t>0]$ and its boundary $\partial R$ as in Section 4.2, assume that the combination

$$
a u(x-2 h, t)+b u(x-h, t)+c u(x, t)+d u(x+h, t)+e u(x+2 h, t)
$$

gives the fourth-order approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ at some general point $(x, t)$ of the mesh. Expanding the terms $u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t)$ and $u(x+2 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a u(x-2 h, t)+b u(x-h, t) & +c u(x, t)+d u(x+h, t)+e u(x+2 h, t) \\
& =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-2 a-b+d+2 e) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2!}(4 a+b+d+4 e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{3!}(-8 a-b+d+8 e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{4!}(16 a+b+d+16 e) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{5!}(-324 a-b+d+32 e) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.4}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,2,3,4)$ in (5.4) to zero and the power of $h$ to 1 gives

$$
c+d+b+e+a=0
$$

$$
\begin{array}{r}
d-b+2 e-2 a=1 \\
d+b+4 e+4 a=0  \tag{5.5}\\
d-b+8 e-8 a=0 \\
d+b+16 e+16 a=0
\end{array}
$$

Solution of this linear system is

$$
a=\frac{1}{12}, \quad b=\frac{-8}{12}, \quad c=0, \quad d=\frac{8}{12}, \quad e=-\frac{1}{12} .
$$

So that

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{1}{12} u(x-2 h, t) & -\frac{8}{12} u(x-h, t)+\frac{8}{12} u(x+h, t)-\frac{1}{12} u(x+2 h, t) \\
& =h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}-\frac{1}{30} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.6}
\end{align*}
$$

Thus the desired approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ is given by

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{u(x-2 h, t)-8 u(x-h, t)+8 u(x+h, t)-u(x+2, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{30} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.7}
\end{align*}
$$

It can be noted that equation (5.7) is only valid for $(x, t)=\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$ with $m=2,3,4, \ldots, N-1$. To attain the same accuracy at the end points ( $x_{1}, t_{n}$ ) and $\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$ special formulae must be devolped which approximate $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ not only to fourth-order but also with dominant error term $\frac{1}{30} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}$ for $x=x_{1}, x_{N}$ and $t=t_{n}$.

Consider then the approximation to $\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$; let

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =a u(x-h, t)+b u(x, t)+c u(x+h, t)+d u(x+2 h, t) \\
& +e u(x+3 h, t)+\frac{2}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.8}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the terms $u(x-h, t), u(x+h, t), u(x+2 h, t)$ and $u(x+3 h, t)$ as Taylor series about the point $(x, t)$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-a+c+2 d+3 e) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}(a+c+4 d+9 e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{6}(-a+c+8 d+27 e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(a+c+16 d+81 e) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{120}(-a+c+32 d+243 e) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.9}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4)$ in (5.9) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
b+a+c+d+e & =0 \\
-a+c+2 d+3 e & =12 \\
a+c+4 d+9 e & =0  \tag{5.10}\\
-a+c+8 d+27 e & =0 \\
a+c+16 d+81 e & =0
\end{align*}
$$

Solution of the linear system (5.10) is

$$
a=-3, \quad b=-10, \quad c=18, \quad d=-6, \quad e=1
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{-3 u(x-h, t)-10 u(x, t) \\
& +18 u(x+h, t)-6 u(x+2 h, t)+u(x+3 h, t)\} \\
& -\frac{1}{20} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.11}
\end{align*}
$$

Consider, now the approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ at the point $(x, t)=\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$; let

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =a u(x-3 h, t)+b u(x-2 h, t)+c u(x-h, t)+d u(x, t) \\
& +e u(x+h, t)+\frac{12}{5} h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Expanding the terms $u(x-3 h, t), u(x-2 h, t), u(x-h, t)$ and $u(x+h, t)$ about the point ( $x, t$ ) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
12 h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} & =(a+b+c+d+e) u(x, t) \\
& +(-3 a-2 b-c+e) h \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \\
& +\frac{1}{2}(9 a+4 b+c+e) h^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}} \\
& +\frac{1}{6}(-27 a-8 b-c+e) h^{3} \frac{\partial^{3} u}{\partial x^{3}} \\
& +\frac{1}{24}(81 a+16 b+c+e) h^{4} \frac{\partial^{4} u}{\partial x^{4}} \\
& +\frac{1}{120}(-243 a-32 b-c+e) h^{5} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{6}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Equating the powers of $h^{i}(i=0,1,2,3,4)$ in (5.13) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
a+b+c+d+e & =0 \\
-3 a-2 b-c+e & =12 \\
9 a+4 b+c+e & =0  \tag{5.14}\\
-27 a-8 b-c+e & =0 \\
81 a+16 b+c+e & =0
\end{align*}
$$

Solving the linear system (5.14) gives

$$
a=-1, \quad b=6, \quad c=-18, \quad d=10, \quad e=3
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x} & =\frac{1}{12 h}\{-u(x-3 h, t)+6 u(x-2 h, t) \\
& -18 u(x-h, t)+10 u(x, t)+3 u(x+h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{20} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{5} u}{\partial x^{5}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

is the desired approximation to $\frac{\partial u(x, t)}{\partial x}$ at the point $\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$.
Consider, next the fourth-order approximations to $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}$ [39];

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{-u(x-2 h, t)+16 u(x-h, t) \\
& -30 u(x, t)+16 u(x+h, t)-u(x+2 h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{90} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{6} u}{\partial x^{6}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{5.16}
\end{align*}
$$

valid for points $(x, t)=(m h, n l) m=2,3,4, \ldots, N-1$,

$$
\begin{aligned}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{9 u(x-h, t)-9 u(x, t)-19 u(x+h, t) \\
& +34 u(x+2 h, t)-21 u(x+3 h, t)+7 u(x+4 h, t) \\
& -u(x+5 h, t)\}+\frac{1}{90} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{6} u}{\partial x^{6}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0(5.17)
\end{aligned}
$$

the approximation to $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}$ at the point $\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{-u(x-5 h, t)+7 u(x-4 h, t)-21 u(x-3 h, t) \\
& +34 u(x-2 h, t)-19 u(x-h, t) \\
& -9 u(x, t)+9 u(x+h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{1}{90} h^{4} \frac{\partial^{6} u}{\partial x^{6}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 . \tag{5.18}
\end{align*}
$$

the approximation to $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}$ at the point $\left(x_{N}, t_{n}\right)$.
Applying (5.1) with (5.7) or (5.11) or (5.16) or (5.17) or (5.18) as appropriate to the N mesh points at the time level $t=n l$, leads to the system of
first-order ordinary differential equations given by vector-matrix form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathrm{U}(t)}{d t}=A \mathrm{U}(t)+\mathbf{b}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{5.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial distribution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(t)= & {\left[U_{1}(t), \quad U_{2}(t) \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T}, } \\
\mathrm{~b}(t)= & {\left[f_{1}(t)+\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(9 \beta+3 \alpha h), \quad f_{2}(t)-\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(\beta+\alpha h), f_{3}(t), \ldots,\right.} \\
& \left.f_{N-2}, \quad f_{N-1}(t)-\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(\beta-\alpha h), f_{N}(t)+\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}(9 \beta-3 \alpha h)\right]^{T}, \\
\mathbf{g}= & {\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), \quad g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T}, }
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\left[\begin{array}{ccccccc}
a_{1} & a_{2} & a_{3} & a_{4} & a_{5} & a_{6} & \bigcirc  \tag{5.21}\\
a_{8} & a_{9} & a_{10} & a_{11} & & & \\
a_{7} & a_{8} & a_{9} & a_{10} & a_{11} & & \\
& \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\
& & a_{7} & a_{8} & a_{9} & a_{10} & a_{11} \\
\bigcirc & a_{6} & a_{5} & a_{7} & a_{4} & a_{3} & a_{9}
\end{array} a_{10} a_{1}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{1}=-9 \beta+10 \alpha h \\
& a_{4}=-21 \beta-\alpha h \\
& a_{7}=-\beta-\alpha h \\
& a_{10}=16 \beta-8 \alpha h
\end{aligned}\left|\begin{array}{l}
a_{2}=-19 \beta-18 \alpha h \\
a_{5}=7 \beta \\
a_{8}=16 \beta+8 \alpha h
\end{array}\right| \begin{aligned}
& a_{3}=34 \beta+6 \alpha h \\
& a_{6}=-\beta=-30 \beta
\end{aligned}
$$

Solving (5.19) subject to (5.20) gives the solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t)=\exp (t A) \mathrm{U}(0)+\int_{0}^{t} \exp [(t-s) A] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{5.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

which satisfies the recurrence relation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\exp (l A) \mathrm{U}(t)+\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp [(t+l-s) A] \mathbf{b}(s) d s \tag{5.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Approximating the matrix exponential function $\exp (l A)$ in (5.23) by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l A)=D^{-1} N \tag{5.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=I-a_{1} l A+a_{2} l^{2} A^{2}-a_{3} l^{3} A^{3}+\left(\frac{-1}{24}+\frac{1}{6} a_{1}-\frac{1}{2} a_{2}+a_{3}\right) l^{4} A^{4} \tag{5.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

is a non-singular matrix and

$$
\begin{equation*}
N=I+\left(1-a_{1}\right) l A+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) l^{2} A^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}+a_{2}-a_{3}\right) l^{3} A^{3} \tag{5.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

as in Chapter 3 and the integral term by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\int_{t}^{t+l} \exp ((t+l-s) A) \mathbf{b}(s) d s=W_{1} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{1}\right)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{2}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{3}\right)+W_{4} \mathbf{b}\left(s_{4}\right) \tag{5.27}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $s_{1} \neq s_{2} \neq s_{3} \neq s_{4}$ and $W_{1}, W_{2}, W_{3}$ and $W_{4}$ are matrices.
These matrices can be obtained by putting $\lambda=-1$ in (3.63)-(3.66) to give

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{1}= & \frac{l}{24}\left\{\left(3 I+\left(-19+78 a_{1}-216 a_{2}+324 a_{3}\right) l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(3-8 a_{1}+12 a_{2}\right)(l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1}  \tag{5.28}\\
W_{2}= & \frac{3}{16} l\left\{\left(2 I-\left(-16+56 a_{1}-144 a_{2}+216 a_{3}\right) l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.+\left(1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3}\right)(l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1},  \tag{5.29}\\
W_{3}= & \frac{3}{8} l\left\{\left(I-\left(7-26 a_{1}+72 a_{2}-108 a_{3}\right) l A\right.\right. \\
& \left.-\left(1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3}\right)(l A)^{2}\right\} D^{-1},  \tag{5.30}\\
W_{4}= & \frac{l}{48} l\left\{\left(6 I+\left(44-168 a_{1}+432 a_{2}-648 a_{3}\right) l A\right.\right. \\
& +\left(11-44 a_{1}+132 a_{2}-216 a_{3}\right)(l A)^{2} \\
& \left.+\left(2-8 a_{1}+24 a_{2}-48 a_{3}\right)(l A)^{3}\right\} D^{-1} . \tag{5.31}
\end{align*}
$$

Hence (5.23) can be written as
$\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\exp (l A) \mathrm{U}(t)+W_{1} \mathbf{b}(t)+W_{2} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)+W_{3} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+W_{4} \mathbf{b}(t+l)$.

### 5.2 Algorithm

The algorithm is similar to that detailed in chapter 3 but it is included for completeness. Assuming that $r_{1}, r_{2}, r_{3}$ and $r_{4}\left(r_{i} \neq 0\right)$ are the real zeros of

$$
\begin{equation*}
q(\theta)=1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-a_{3} \theta^{3}+\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right) \theta^{4} \tag{5.33}
\end{equation*}
$$

then $D$ given by (5.25) can be factorized as

$$
\begin{equation*}
D=\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right) \tag{5.34}
\end{equation*}
$$

and then (5.68) can be written in partial-fraction form as

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)= & \left\{A_{1}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+A_{2}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+A_{3}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+A_{4}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{U}(t) \\
+ & \frac{l}{24}\left\{B_{1}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+B_{2}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+B_{3}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+B_{4}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}(t) \\
+ & \frac{3}{16} l\left\{C_{1}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+C_{2}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+C_{3}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+C_{4}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\
+ & \frac{3}{8} l\left\{D_{1}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+D_{2}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+D_{3}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+D_{4}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
+ & \frac{l}{48}\left\{E_{1}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A\right)^{-1}+E_{2}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A\right)^{-1}\right. \\
& \left.+E_{3}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{3}} A\right)^{-1}+E_{4}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{4}} A\right)^{-1}\right\} b(t+l) \tag{5.35}
\end{align*}
$$

in which for $i=1,2,3,4$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& A_{i}=\frac{1+p_{1} r_{i}+p_{2} r_{i}^{2}+p_{3} r_{i}^{3}}{\prod_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{i}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& B_{i}=\frac{3+p_{4} r_{i}+p_{5} r_{i}^{2}}{\Pi_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{i}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& C_{i}=\frac{2-p_{6} r_{i}+p_{7} r_{i}^{2}}{\Pi_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{i}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& D_{i}=\frac{1-p_{8} r_{i}-p_{g} r_{i}^{2}}{\Pi_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{i}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \\
& j \neq i \\
& E_{i}=\frac{6+p_{10} r_{i}+p_{11} r_{i}^{2}+p_{12} r_{i}^{3}}{\Pi_{j=1}^{4}\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{j}}\right)} \\
& j \neq i
\end{aligned}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
& p_{1}=1-a_{1} \\
& p_{2}=\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2} \\
& p_{3}=\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}-a_{3} \\
& p_{4}=-19+78 a_{1}-216 a_{2}+324 a_{3} \\
& p_{5}=3-8 a_{1}+12 a_{2} \\
& p_{6}=-16+56 a_{1}-144 a_{2}+216 a_{3} \\
& p_{7}=1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3} \\
& p_{8}=7-26 a_{1}+72 a_{2}-108 a_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{aligned}
& p_{9}=1-4 a_{1}+12 a_{2}-24 a_{3} \\
& p_{10}=44-168 a_{1}+432 a_{2}-648 a_{3} \\
& p_{11}=11-44 a_{1}+132 a_{2}-216 a_{3} \\
& p_{12}=2-8 a_{1}+24 a_{2}-48 a_{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

Hence

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)= & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{1} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{1} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{1} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{1} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{2} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{2} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{2} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{2} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{2} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{3} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{3} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{3} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{3} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{3} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \\
+ & \left(I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} l A\right)^{-1}\left[A_{4} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{4} \mathrm{~b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{4} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right.\right. \\
& \left.\left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{4} \mathrm{~b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{4} \mathrm{~b}(t+l)\right)\right] \tag{5.36}
\end{align*}
$$

which gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l) & =\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} l A\right)^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{1}+\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} l A\right)^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{2} \\
& +\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} l A\right)^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{3}+\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} l A\right)^{-1} z_{4} \tag{5.37}
\end{align*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{z}_{\mathrm{i}} & =A_{\mathrm{i}} \mathrm{U}(t)+\frac{l}{24}\left(B_{i} \mathbf{b}(t)+\frac{3}{16} l C_{\mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right)\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{3}{8} l D_{i} \mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2}{3} l\right)+\frac{l}{48} E_{\mathbf{i}} \mathbf{b}(t+l)\right) \quad i=1,2,3,4
\end{aligned}
$$

Let

$$
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} l A\right)^{-1} \mathbf{z}_{i}=\mathbf{y}_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4
$$

then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} l A\right) \mathbf{y}_{i}=\mathbf{z}_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{5.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{y}_{1}+\mathbf{y}_{2}+\mathbf{y}_{3}+\mathbf{y}_{4} \tag{5.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $\mathbf{y}_{1}, \mathbf{y}_{2}, \mathbf{y}_{3}$ and $\mathbf{y}_{4}$ are the solutions of the systems

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{1}{r_{i}} \lambda l A\right) \mathbf{y}_{i}=z_{i}, \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{5.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

respectively. This algorithm is presented in tabular form in Table 5.1.

### 5.3 Numerical Example

In this section a representative of many other methods based on (5.24) will only be used. Taking

$$
\begin{aligned}
& a_{1}=\frac{64}{25} \\
& a_{2}=\frac{7}{3}
\end{aligned}
$$

and

$$
a_{3}=\frac{547}{600}
$$

it is found that

$$
\begin{gathered}
r_{1}=2.1883713223893, \quad r_{2}=2.3398749224808 \\
r_{3}=2.18837132239, \quad r_{4}=2.33987492248
\end{gathered}
$$

are the real zeros of (5.69). These values produce

$$
A_{1}=-176.18490160503, \quad A_{2}=2051.1048759736
$$

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
A_{3}=-1873.9199743685, & A_{4}=1873.9199743685 \\
B_{1}=-176.18490160503, & B_{2}=2051.1048759736 \\
B_{3}=-1873.9199743685, & B_{4}=1873.9199743685 \\
C_{1}=-176.18490160503, & C_{2}=2051.1048759736 \\
C_{3}=-1873.9199743685, & C_{4}=1873.9199743685 \\
D_{1}=-176.18490160503, & D_{2}=2051.1048759736 \\
D_{3}=-1873.9199743685, & D_{4}=1873.9199743685 \\
E_{1}=-176.18490160503, & E_{2}=2051.1048759736 \\
E_{3}=-1873.9199743685, & E_{4}=1873.9199743685
\end{array}
$$

Consider once again the problem $\{(4.63)-(4.66)\}$, mentioned here for convenience,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial u}{\partial t}+5 \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}=\beta \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad \beta>0, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{5.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{aligned}
& h_{1}(t)=u(0, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(2+5 t)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right), t>0, \quad \text { 5.42) } \\
& h_{2}(t)=u(1, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(1+5 t)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right), \quad t>0, \quad \text { 5.43) }
\end{aligned}
$$

and the initial condition

$$
\begin{equation*}
g(x)=u(x, 0)=\exp \left(\frac{-(2-x)^{2}}{8}\right), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{5.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sqrt{\frac{2}{2+\beta t}} \exp \left(\frac{-(x-5 t-2)^{2}}{4(2+\beta t)}\right) \tag{5.45}
\end{equation*}
$$

(see Jain et el. [19]). Using the Algorithm developed in Section 5.2 with the information given at the beginning of this section the problem $\{(5.41)-$ (5.45) $\}$ is solved for $h=0.1,0.05,0.025,0.01,0.005$ and $l=0.1,0.05,0.025$, $0.01,0.005$ using $\beta=1000$. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly with third-order accuracy over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and no contrived oscillations are observed. Maximum errors at time $t=0.5$ are observed at the mid-point of the region except for very small values of $h$ and $l$ and are given in Table 5.2. For $h=0.05$ and $l=0.001$ the maximum error and relative percentage error obtained are $-0.980 D-14$ and $-0.157 D-10$ respectively at point 8 of the discretization. It is noticed that the numerical solution crosses the analytical solution in this experiment but no oscillations are observed. The numerical solutions for $h=0.1$ and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$ is depicted in Figure 5.1.

Table 5.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 | Processor 4 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| 1 <br> Input | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A, A_{1} \\ & B_{1}, C_{1}, D_{1}, E_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A, A_{2} \\ & B_{2}, C_{2}, D_{2}, E_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A, A_{3} \\ & B_{3}, C_{3}, D_{3}, E_{3} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{4}, \mathrm{U}_{0}, A, A_{4} \\ & B_{4}, C_{4}, D_{4}, E_{4} \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 2 \\ \text { Comp } \end{gathered}$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} A$ |
| $3$ <br> Decom | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{4} U_{4} \end{aligned}$ |
| 4 <br> Comp | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{2 l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{4}=\mathrm{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2 l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{4}=\mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathrm{b}_{1}=\mathrm{b}(t) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{2}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{3}=\mathrm{b}\left(t+\frac{8 l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathrm{b}_{4}=\mathrm{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{b}_{1}=\mathbf{b}(t) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{2}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{3}=\mathbf{b}\left(t+\frac{2 l}{3}\right) \\ & \mathbf{b}_{\mathbf{4}}=\mathbf{b}(t+l) \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 5 \\ \text { Using } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{1}(t) \\ & =\frac{l}{48}\left\{2 B_{1} \mathbf{b}_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{1} \mathbf{b}_{2} \\ & +18 D_{1} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{1} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & \mathbf{w}_{2}(t) \\ & =\frac{l}{48}\left\{2 B_{2} \mathbf{b}_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{2} b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{2} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{2} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & w_{3}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{3} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{3} b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{3} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{3} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & w_{4}(t) \\ & =\frac{1}{48}\left\{2 B_{4} b_{1}\right. \\ & +9 C_{4} 1 b_{2} \\ & +18 D_{4} b_{3} \\ & \left.+E_{4} b_{4}\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} \mathbf{y}_{1}(t) \\ & =A_{1} U(t) \\ & +w_{1}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} \mathbf{y}_{2}(t) \\ & =A_{2} U(t) \\ & +w_{2}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} y_{3}(t) \\ & =A_{3} U(t) \\ & +W_{3}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{4} U_{4} y_{4}(t) \\ & =A_{4} U(t) \\ & +w_{4}(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 7 | $\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\mathrm{y}_{1}(t)+\mathrm{y}_{2}(t)+\mathrm{y}_{3}(t)+\mathrm{y}_{4}(t)$ |  |  |  |
| 8 | GO TO Step 4 for next time step |  |  |  |

Table 5.2: Maximum errors for Example 1 at $t=0.5$

| $h$ | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.025 | 0.01 | 0.005 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $N$ | 9 | 19 | 39 | 99 | 199 |
| $l=0.1$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-7 \\ 5 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-7 \\ 10 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-7 \\ 20 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-7 \\ 50 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-7 \\ 100 \end{gathered}$ |
| $l=0.05$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.108 \mathrm{D}-8 \\ 5 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.108 \mathrm{D}-8 \\ 10 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 D-8 \\ 20 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.108 \mathrm{D}-8 \\ 50 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.107 \mathrm{D}-8 \\ 100 \end{gathered}$ |
| $l=0.025$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.119 \mathrm{D}-9 \\ 5 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.119 \mathrm{D}-9 \\ 10 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.119 \mathrm{D}-9 \\ 20 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.117 \mathrm{D}-9 \\ 50 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.115 \mathrm{D}-9 \\ 100 \end{gathered}$ |
| $l=0.01$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.650 \mathrm{D}-11 \\ 5 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.645 \mathrm{D}-11 \\ 10 \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.646 \mathrm{D}-11 \\ 20 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.555 \mathrm{D}-11 \\ 51 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.602 \mathrm{D}-11 \\ 107 \end{gathered}$ |
| $l=0.005$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.660 \mathrm{D}-12 \\ 5 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.615 \mathrm{D}-12 \\ 10 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.669 \mathrm{D}-12 \\ 20 \\ \hline \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.515 \mathrm{D}-12 \\ 49 \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{gathered} -0.709 \mathrm{D}-13 \\ 80 \end{gathered}$ |

Figure 5.1


Figure 5.1: Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=0.5$

## Chapter 6

## Third-Order Finite-Difference Methods for Second-Order Hyperbolic Partial Differential Equations

### 6.1 The Model Problem

Consider the one-dimensional initial/boundary-value (IBVP) problem consisting of the partial differential equation ( $P D E$ )

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=c^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<X, \quad t>0 \tag{6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $u=u(x, t)$ subject to the homogeneous boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(X, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{6.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =g(x),  \tag{6.3}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =f(x), \tag{6.4}
\end{align*}
$$

in which $g(x)$ and $f(x)$ are given continuous functions of $x$.
There will exist discontinuities between the initial and the boundary conditions if

$$
g(0) \neq 0 \text { and/or } g(X) \neq 0
$$

### 6.2 Discretization of $R \cup \partial R$

The region $R$ (the open rectangle bounded by the lines $x=0, t=0, x=X$ ) and its boundary $\partial R$ are covered by a grid, consisting of lines parallel to the time axis and lines parallel to the space axis ( $x$-axis). Assuming $h>0$ and $l>0$, the interval $0 \leq x \leq X$ is divided into $N+1$ subintervals each of width $h$, so that

$$
(N+1) h=X
$$

and the time $t \geq 0$ is divided into equal time steps of length $l$. The parameter $h$ is called the space-step and $l$ is the time-step. Each discrete mesh point has co-ordinates of the form

$$
\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)=(m h, n l)
$$

for $m=0,1,2, \ldots, N+1$ and $n=0,1,2, \ldots$.

### 6.3 The Method

Replacing the space derivative $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}$ in the $P D E(6.1)$ by the third-order difference approximations [38]

$$
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}=\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{11 u(x-h, t)-20 u(x, t)+6 u(x+h, t)
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +4 u(x+2 h, t)-u(x+3 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{6.5}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh points $\left(x_{m}, t_{n}\right)$ with $m=1,2, \ldots, N-2$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{u(x-3 h, t)-6 u(x-2 h, t)+26 u(x-h, t) \\
& -40 u(x, t)+21 u(x+h, t)-2 u(x+2 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{6.6}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh point $\left(x_{N-1}, t_{n}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & =\frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{2 u(x-4 h, t)-11 u(x-3 h, t)+24 u(x-2 h, t) \\
& -14 u(x-h, t)-10 u(x, t)-9 u(x+h, t)\}+\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\partial^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}} \\
& +O\left(h^{4}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{6.7}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh point ( $x_{N}, t_{n}$ ), provides a system of $N$ second-order ordinary differential equations ( $O D E^{\prime} s$ ) which can be written in matrix-vector form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{2} \mathbf{U}(t)}{d t^{2}}=A \mathbf{U}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{6.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathrm{U}(0)}{d t}=\mathbf{f}(x) \tag{6.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathrm{U}(t) & =\left[U_{1}(t), U_{2}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{g} & =\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T}, \\
\mathbf{f} & =\left[f\left(x_{1}\right), f\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, f\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T},
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{c^{2}}{12 h^{2}}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrrrr}
-20 & 6 & 4 & -1 & & & & \bigcirc  \tag{6.11}\\
11 & -20 & 6 & 4 & -1 & & & \\
& 11 & -20 & 6 & 4 & -1 & & \\
& & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \\
& & & 11 & -20 & 6 & 4 & -1 \\
& & & & 11 & -20 & 6 & 4 \\
\bigcirc & & & 1 & -6 & 26 & -40 & 21 \\
& & & 2 & -11 & 24 & -14 & -10
\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

It is noted that the approximations in (6.5), (6.6) and (6.7) all have the same leading error term $\frac{h^{3}}{12} \frac{\theta^{5} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{5}}$, thus ensuring the same accuracy at all mesh points at time level $t_{n}$.

The eigenvalues of $A$ are not known in closed form and must be calculated using, for instance, NAG subroutine F02AFF for a given vale of $N$. It will be seen that the stability of an algorithm can only be established if all eigenvalues of $A$, for a given $N$, have negative real parts.

The analytical solution of (6.8)-(6.10) is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t)=\frac{1}{2} \exp (t B)\left\{\mathbf{g}+B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\}+\frac{1}{2} \exp (-t B)\left\{\mathbf{g}-B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\} \tag{6.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $B$ is a square matrix of order $N$ such that

$$
B^{2}=A
$$

For a time-step $l$, the semi-discrete solution $U(t)$ satisfies the recurrence relation

$$
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\{\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)\} \mathbf{U}(t)-\mathbf{U}(t-l), \quad t=l, 2 l, \ldots \text { (6.13) }
$$

Twizell [40].

### 6.4 Solution at the First Time-Step

## Using Taylor's series

Substituting $t=l$ in (6.12) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(l)=\frac{1}{2} \exp (l B)\left\{\mathbf{g}+B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\}+\frac{1}{2} \exp (-l B)\left\{\mathbf{g}-B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\} \tag{6.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(l)=\frac{1}{2}\{\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)\} \mathrm{g}+\frac{1}{2}\{\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)\} B^{-1} \mathrm{f} . \tag{6.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)=I+l B+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots \tag{6.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (-l B)=I-l B+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}-\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}-\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{8} B^{6}-\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots \tag{6.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)=2\left(I+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) \tag{6.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)=2\left(l B+\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots\right) \tag{6.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)=2\left\{I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{5!} 4^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right\} l B . \tag{6.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Substituting these values in (6.15) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(l) & =\left(I+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) \mathbf{g} \\
& +\left(I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) l \mathbf{f} \tag{6.21}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\mathbf{U}(l)=\left(I+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} A+O\left(l^{4}\right)\right) \mathbf{g}+\left(I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} A+O\left(l^{4}\right)\right) l \mathbf{f} .(6.22)
$$

### 6.5 Rational Approximation to Matrix Exponential Function

To approximate the matrix exponential function in (6.13) consider the rational approximant (1.1)

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{3}(\theta)=\frac{1+\left(1-a_{1}\right) \theta+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{2}}{1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{3}} \tag{6.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $a_{1}$ and $a_{2}$ are parameters. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
1+\left(1-a_{1}\right) \theta+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{2}=p(\theta) \tag{6.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{3}=q(\theta) \tag{6.25}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now consider the sum

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{3}(\theta)+E_{3}(-\theta)=\frac{p(\theta)}{q(\theta)}+\frac{p(-\theta)}{q(-\theta)}=\frac{P(\theta)}{Q(\theta)} \tag{6.26}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
P(\theta) & =p(\theta) \times q(-\theta)+p(-\theta) \times q(\theta) \\
& =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) \theta^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{6}\right) \theta^{4}\right\} \tag{6.27}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
Q(\theta) & =q(\theta) \times q(-\theta) \\
& =1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) \theta^{2}-\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) \theta^{4} \\
& -\left(\frac{1}{6}+a_{2}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}\right)^{2} \theta^{6} . \tag{6.28}
\end{align*}
$$

Assuming $\phi=\theta^{2}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
P(\phi) & =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) \phi\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{6}\right) \phi^{2}\right\} \tag{6.29}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
Q(\phi) & =1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) \phi-\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) \phi^{2} \\
& -\left(\frac{1}{6}+a_{2}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}\right)^{2} \phi^{3} . \tag{6.30}
\end{align*}
$$

### 6.6 Accuracy

It is convenient to consider the single initial-value problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
D^{2} y \equiv y^{\prime \prime}(t)=f(t, y), t>t_{0}, \quad y\left(t_{0}\right)=y_{0}, \quad y^{\prime}\left(t_{0}\right)=z_{0} \tag{6.31}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y=y(t)$ and $D^{2}=\frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}$. The numerical solution to this problem may be obtained from the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(t+l)=\{\exp (l D)+\exp (-l D)\} y(t)-y(t-l) \tag{6.32}
\end{equation*}
$$

Replacing $\theta$ by $l D$ in (6.26) and then substituting the value of $\exp (l D)+$ $\exp (-l D)$ in (6.32) leads to

$$
y_{n+1}=\left(a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{2}\right) l^{2} y_{n+1}^{\prime \prime}+\left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4} y_{n+1}^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) l^{6} y_{n+1}^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}+2 y_{n}+2\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{2}\right) l^{2} y_{n}^{\prime \prime} \\
& +2\left(\frac{1}{6}+\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{2}\right) l^{4} y_{n}^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}-y_{n-1} \\
& -\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) l^{2} y_{n-1}^{\prime \prime}-\left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4} y_{n-1}^{\prime \prime \prime \prime} \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right)^{2} l^{6} y_{n-1}^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime} \tag{6.33}
\end{align*}
$$

in which $y_{n}$ is an approximation to $y\left(t_{n}\right)$. The associated local truncation error is

$$
\begin{align*}
L[y(t) ; l] & =y(t+l)-\left(a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{2}\right) l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t+l)-\left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t+l) \\
& -\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right) l^{6} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t+l)-2 y(t)-2\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{2}\right) l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t) \\
& -2\left(\frac{1}{6}+\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{2}\right) l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+y(t-l) \\
& +\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t-l)-\left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t-l) \\
& -\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right)^{2} l^{6} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t-l) \tag{6.34}
\end{align*}
$$

which may be expanded as a Taylor series about $t$ to give

$$
\begin{aligned}
L[y(t) ; l]= & y(t)+l y^{\prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{6} l^{3} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{24} l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{120} l^{5} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t) \\
& +\frac{1}{720} l^{6} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}+\ldots \\
- & \left(a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{2}\right) l^{2}\left\{y^{\prime \prime}(t)+l y^{\prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{6} l^{3} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{24} l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}\right. \\
& +\ldots\} \\
- & \left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4}\left\{y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+l y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\ldots\right\} \\
- & \left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right)^{2} l^{6}\left\{y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\ldots\right\} \\
- & 2 y(t)-2\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{2}\right) l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t) \\
- & 2\left(\frac{1}{6}+\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{2}\right) l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t) \\
+ & y(t)-l y^{\prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)-\frac{1}{6} l^{3} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{24} l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)-\frac{1}{120} l^{5} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +\frac{1}{720} l^{6} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}-\ldots \\
+ & \left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) l^{2}\left\{y^{\prime \prime}(t)-l y^{\prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)-\frac{1}{6} l^{3} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{24} l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}\right. \\
& -\ldots\} \\
- & \left(\frac{a_{1}}{3}-a_{1}^{2}+2 a_{1} a_{2}-a_{2}^{2}\right) l^{4}\left\{y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)-l y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+\frac{1}{2} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)-\ldots\right\} \\
- & \left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}\right)^{2} l^{6}\left\{y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)-\ldots\right\} . \tag{6.35}
\end{align*}
$$

After simplification (6.35) becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
L[y(t) ; l]=\left(-\frac{1}{4}+\frac{1}{2} a_{1}-a_{2}\right) l^{4} y^{\prime \prime \prime \prime}(t)+O\left(l^{5}\right) \tag{6.36}
\end{equation*}
$$

### 6.7 Development of Parallel Algorithm

Suppose that $r_{i}\left(i=1,2,3, r_{i} \neq 0\right)$ are distinct real zeros of $Q(\phi)$ defined by (6.30) then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)=\sum_{i=1}^{3} c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1} \tag{6.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B^{2}=A$ and $c_{i}(i=1,2,3)$, the partial-fraction coefficients, are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{i}=\frac{P\left(r_{i}\right)}{\prod_{\substack{j=1 \\ j \neq i}}\left(1-\frac{r_{i}}{r_{j}}\right)}, \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{6.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
P\left(r_{i}\right) & =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) r_{i}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{3}{2} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{2}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{2}{3} a_{1}+\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{6}\right) r_{i}^{2}\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

$i=1,2,3$. So, using (6.31) in (6.13) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{3} c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1}\right) \mathbf{U}(t)-\mathbf{U}(t-l) \tag{6.39}
\end{equation*}
$$

$t=l, 2 l, 3 l, \ldots$. Now let

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1} \mathrm{U}(t)=\mathrm{w}_{i}(t), \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{6.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the systems of linear equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right) \mathbf{w}_{i}(t)=c_{i} \mathrm{U}(t), \quad i=1,2,3 \tag{6.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

can be solved for $\mathbf{w}_{i}(t)(i=1,2,3)$ on three different processors simultaneously, and finally

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\sum_{i=1}^{3} \mathrm{w}_{i}(t)-\mathrm{U}(t-l) \quad t=l, 2 l, 3 l, \ldots \tag{6.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

This algorithm is given in tabular form in Table 6.1.

### 6.8 Numerical Examples

In this section a representative of many other methods based on (6.23) will only be used. So taking $a_{1}=\frac{65431}{50000}$ and $a_{2}=\frac{171151}{300000}$ as before gives $r_{1}=4.788969044658795, r_{2}=5.475014652818082, r_{3}=5.554994179738606$ as the real zeros of (6.30). Using these values in (6.38) gives

$$
c_{1}=-352.369803216, \quad c_{2}=4102.20974857, \quad c_{3}=-3747.83994535
$$

### 6.8.1 Example 1

Considering the one dimensional wave equation with constant coefficients (6.1) and taking $X=1, g(x)=\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x)$ and $f(x)=0$ in $\{(6.1)-(6.4)\}$ the model problem becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=c^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<1, \quad t>0 \tag{6.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1  \tag{6.44}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =0, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 1 \tag{6.45}
\end{align*}
$$

and the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(1, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{6.46}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem, which has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x) \cos (c \pi t) \tag{6.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

has no discontinuities between the initial conditions and the boundary conditions at $x=0$ and $x=1$. The theoretical solution at time $t=1.0$ is depicted in Figure 6.1.

Using the algorithm developed in Section 6.7 the model problem \{(6.43)(6.46) $\}$ is solved for $h, l=0.1,0.05,0.025,0.0125$ using $c=\frac{1}{10}$ at time $t=1.0$, 2.0 , and 3.0 In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$. The numerical solution for $h=0.1$ and $l=0.1$ at time $t=1.0$ is depicted in Figure 6.2. The profile depicted in Figure 6.2 (and in Figure 6.4 later) appears not to be smooth. This is because $h$ and $l$ are large and the software used (MATHEMATICA) joins the points associated with the calculations with straight lines. Comparing the peaks of Figure 6.1 and 6.2 confirms the accuracy of the method. The maximum absolute errors with positions are given in Table 6.2. It is clear from Table 6.2 that the method is third-order accurate for all values of $t$ but error grows slightly as time increases.

### 6.8.2 Example 2

Considering the equation with constant coefficients (6.1) and taking $X=0.5$, $g(x)=0)$ and $f(x)=\sin (4 \pi x)$ in $\{(6.1)-(6.4)\}$ the model problem becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=\frac{1}{16 \pi^{2}} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<0.5, \quad t>0 \tag{0.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =0, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 0.5  \tag{6.49}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =\sin (4 \pi x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 0.5 \tag{6.50}
\end{align*}
$$

and the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(1, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{6.51}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem, which has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sin (4 \pi x) \sin (t) \tag{6.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

[6] has no discontinuities between the initial conditions and the boundary conditions at $x=0$ and $x=1$. The theoretical solution at time $t=0.5$ is depicted in Figures 6.3.

The model problem $\{(6.48)-(6.51)\}$ was also solved for $h, l=0.05,0.025$, $0.0125,0.00625$ at time $t=0.5$ and 1.0. The method again behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 0.5$ and gives maximum error at the centre of the region except for $h, l=0.05$ and 0.025 . The numerical solution for $h=0.05$ and $l=0.05$ at time $t=0.5$ is depicted in Figure 6.4. Comparing the peaks and troughs of Figures 6.3 and 6.4 confirms the accuracy obtained using the method. All other numerical solutions produce better graphs. The maximum absolute errors with their positions are given in Table 6.3. It is clear from Table 6.3 that the method is third-order accurate for both values of $t$ but maximum absolute error grows slightly as time increases.

Table 6.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\begin{gathered} 1 \\ \text { Input } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, c_{1}, \\ & \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, c_{2}, \\ & U_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, c_{3} \\ & \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ |
| $2$ <br> Compute | $I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{l}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A$ |
| $3$ <br> Decompose | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 4 \\ \text { Find } \end{gathered}$ | Solution at the first time step |  |  |
| 5 <br> Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} \mathbf{w}_{1}(t) \\ & =c_{1} \mathrm{U}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} \mathbf{W}_{2}(t) \\ & =c_{2} U(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} W_{3}(t) \\ & =c_{3} U(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 | $\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\mathbf{w}_{1}(t)+\mathbf{w}_{2}(t)+\mathbf{w}_{3}(t)-\mathbf{U}(t-l)$ |  |  |
| 7 | GO TO Step 5 for next time step |  |  |

Table 6.2: Maximum absolute errors for Example 1

| N | 9 | 19 | 39 | 79 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $h, l$ | 0.1 | 0.05 | 0.025 | 0.0125 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=1.0$ | $0.124847 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.177997 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.231373 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.305657 \mathrm{D}-7$ |
| Positions | 1 | 17 | 4 | 72 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=2.0$ | $0.399566 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.612910 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.785875 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.106804 \mathrm{D}-6$ |
| Positions | 8 | 16 | 7 | 66 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=3.0$ | $0.741103 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.107269 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.135521 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.190258 \mathrm{D}-6$ |
| Positions | 7 | 15 | 9 | 61 |

Positions are shown by space ateps.

Table 6.3: Maximum absolute errors for Example 2

| N | 9 | 19 | 39 | 79 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $h, l$ | 0.05 | 0.025 | 0.0125 | 0.00625 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=0.5$ | $0.386306 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.512678 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.650840 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.818575 \mathrm{D}-6$ |
| Positions | 4 | 9 | 20 | 40 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=1.0$ | $0.286251 \mathrm{D}-2$ | $0.379984 \mathrm{D}-3$ | $0.482384 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.606705 \mathrm{D}-5$ |
| Positions | 4 | 9 | 20 | 40 |

Positions are shown by space steps.

Figure 6.1


Figure 6.1: Theoretical solution of example 1 for time $t=1.0$

Figure 6.2


Figure 6.2: Numerical solution of example 1 for $h=0.1$, and $l=0.1$ at time $t=1.0$

Figure 6.3


Figure 6.3: Theoretical solution of example 2 for time $t=0.5$

Figure 6.4


Figure 6.4: Numerical solution of example 2 for $h, l=0.05$ at time $t=0.5$

## Chapter 7

## Fourth-Order Finite-Difference Methods for Second-Order Hyperbolic Partial Differential Equations

### 7.1 The method

Considering the model problem of Chapter 6 consisting of the partial differential equation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=c^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<X, \quad t>0 \tag{7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which $u=u(x, t)$ subject to the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(X, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{7.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

and the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =g(x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq X  \tag{7.3}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =f(x), \tag{7.4}
\end{align*} \quad 0 \leq x \leq X, ~ \$
$$

in which $g(x)$ and $f(x)$ are given continuous functions of $x$, the method can be developed by replacing the space derivative $\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}}$ in (7.1) by the fourth-order difference approximations [39]

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & \simeq \frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{9 u(x-h, t)-9 u(x, t)-19 u(x+h, t) \\
& +34 u(x+2 h, t)-21 u(x+3 h, t)+7 u(x+4 h, t) \\
& -u(x+5 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{4}}{90} \frac{\partial^{6} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{6}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{7.5}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh point $\left(x_{1}, t_{n}\right)$,

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & \simeq \frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{-u(x-2 h, t)+16 u(x-h, t)-30 u(x, t) \\
& +16 u(x+h, t)-u(x+2 h, t)\}+\frac{h^{4}}{90} \frac{\partial^{6} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{6}} \\
& +O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{7.6}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh points ( $x_{m}, t_{n}$ ) with $m=2,3, \ldots, N-1$ and

$$
\begin{align*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{2}} & \simeq \frac{1}{12 h^{2}}\{-u(x-5 h, t)+7 u(x-4 h, t)-21 u(x-3 h, t) \\
& +34 u(x-2 h, t)-19 u(x-h, t)-9 u(x, t)+9 u(x+h, t)\} \\
& +\frac{h^{4}}{90} \frac{\partial^{6} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{6}}+O\left(h^{5}\right) \text { as } h \rightarrow 0 \tag{7.7}
\end{align*}
$$

for the mesh point ( $x_{N}, t_{n}$ ), provides a system of $N$ second-order ordinary differential equations which can be written in vector-matrix form as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d^{2} \mathrm{U}(t)}{d t^{2}}=A \mathrm{U}(t), \quad t>0 \tag{7.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

with initial conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(0)=\mathbf{g} \tag{7.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{d \mathbf{U}(0)}{d t}=\mathbf{f}(x) \tag{7.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{aligned}
\mathbf{U}(t) & =\left[U_{1}(t), U_{2}(t), \ldots, U_{N}(t)\right]^{T} \\
\mathbf{g} & =\left[g\left(x_{1}\right), g\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, g\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T}, \\
\mathbf{f} & =\left[f\left(x_{1}\right), f\left(x_{2}\right), \ldots, f\left(x_{N}\right)\right]^{T},
\end{aligned}
$$

$T$ denoting transpose and

$$
A=\frac{c^{2}}{12 h^{2}}\left[\begin{array}{rrrrrrrr}
-9 & -19 & 34 & -21 & 7 & -1 & & \bigcirc  \tag{7.11}\\
16 & -30 & 16 & -1 & & & & \\
-1 & 16 & -30 & 16 & -1 & & & \\
& \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & \ddots & & \\
& & -1 & 16 & -30 & 16 & -1 & \\
& & & -1 & 16 & -30 & 16 & -1 \\
\bigcirc & & -1 & 7 & -21 & 34 & -19 & -9
\end{array}\right]_{N \times N}
$$

It is noted that the approximations in (7.5), (7.6) and (7.7) all have the same leading error term $\frac{h^{4}}{90} \frac{\partial^{6} u(x, t)}{\partial x^{6}}$, thus ensuring the same accuracy at all mesh points at time level $t_{n}$.

The eigenvalues of $A$ must have negative real parts to ensure the stability of the algorithm to be developed. These eigenvalues are not known in closed form and must be calculated for a given value of $N$ using software such as NAG subroutine F02AFF.

### 7.2 Solution at the First Time-Step

## Using Taylor's series

Substituting $t=l$ in (6.12) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(l)=\frac{1}{2} \exp (l B)\left\{\mathbf{g}+B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\}+\frac{1}{2} \exp (-l B)\left\{\mathbf{g}-B^{-1} \mathbf{f}\right\} \tag{7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

which can be written as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(l)=\frac{1}{2}\{\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)\} \mathbf{g}+\frac{1}{2}\{\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)\} B^{-1} \mathrm{f} \tag{7.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)=I+l B+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots \tag{7.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (-l B)=I-l B+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}-\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}-\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}-\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots \tag{7.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)=2\left(I+\frac{1}{2 l^{2}} B^{2}+\frac{1}{4!} 4^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) \tag{7.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)=2\left(l B+\frac{1}{3!} l^{3} B^{3}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{5} B^{5}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{7} B^{7}+\ldots\right) \tag{7.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\exp (l B)-\exp (-l B)=2\left\{I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right\} l B
$$

Substituting these values in (7.13) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathrm{U}(l) & =\left(I+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{6!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) \mathbf{g} \\
& +\left(I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} B^{2}+\frac{1}{5!} l^{4} B^{4}+\frac{1}{7!} l^{6} B^{6}+\ldots\right) l \mathbf{f} \tag{7.19}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathbf{U}(l) & =\left(I+\frac{1}{2!} l^{2} A+\frac{1}{4!} l^{4} A^{2}+O\left(l^{5}\right)\right) \mathbf{g} \\
& +\left(I+\frac{1}{3!} l^{2} A+O\left(l^{5}\right)\right) l \mathbf{f} . \tag{7.20}
\end{align*}
$$

### 7.3 Rational Approximation to Matrix Exponentional Function

To approximate the matrix exponential functions in (7.13) consider the rational approximant (1.2), given for a real scalar $\theta$, by

$$
E_{4}(\theta)=\frac{1+\left(1-a_{1}\right) \theta+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}+a_{2}-a_{3}\right) \theta^{3}}{1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-a_{3} \theta^{3}+\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right) \theta^{4}} . \text { (7.21) }
$$

where $a_{1} a_{2}$ and $a_{3}$ are parameters. Let

$$
\begin{equation*}
1+\left(1-a_{1}\right) \theta+\left(\frac{1}{2}-a_{1}+a_{2}\right) \theta^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{6}-\frac{a_{1}}{2}+a_{2}-a_{3}\right) \theta^{3}=p(\theta) \tag{7.22}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
1-a_{1} \theta+a_{2} \theta^{2}-a_{3} \theta^{3}+\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right) \theta^{4}=q(\theta) \tag{7.23}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now consider the sum

$$
\begin{equation*}
E_{4}(\theta)+E_{4}(-\theta)=\frac{p(\theta)}{q(\theta)}+\frac{p(-\theta)}{q(-\theta)}=\frac{P(\theta)}{Q(\theta)} \tag{7.24}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{align*}
P(\theta) & =p(\theta) \times q(-\theta)+p(-\theta) \times q(\theta) \\
& =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) \theta^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{24}\right) \theta^{4}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{a_{3}}{6}-\frac{3}{2} a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{2} a_{3}+\frac{a_{1}}{8}-\frac{7}{24} a_{2}-\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{6}+\frac{2}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-\frac{a_{2}^{2}}{2}-\frac{1}{48}\right) \theta^{6}\right\} \tag{7.25}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
Q(\theta) & =q(\theta) \times q(-\theta) \\
& =1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) \theta^{2}+\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-a_{2}+2 a_{3}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{12}\right) \theta^{4} \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1} a_{2}+2 a_{2} a_{3}-a_{2}^{2}-\frac{a_{2}}{12}-a_{3}^{2}\right) \theta^{6} \\
& +\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right)^{2} \theta^{8} . \tag{7.26}
\end{align*}
$$

Assuming $\phi=\boldsymbol{\theta}^{2}$ gives

$$
\begin{align*}
P(\phi) & =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) \phi+\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{24}\right) \phi^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{a_{3}}{6}-\frac{3}{2} a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{2} a_{3}+\frac{a_{1}}{8}-\frac{7}{24} a_{2}-\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{6}+\frac{2}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-\frac{a_{2}^{2}}{2}-\frac{1}{48}\right) \phi^{3}\right\} \tag{7.27}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
Q(\phi) & =1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}\right) \phi+\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-a_{2}+2 a_{3}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{12}\right) \phi^{2} \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1} a_{2}+2 a_{2} a_{3}-a_{2}^{2}-\frac{a_{2}}{12}-a_{3}^{2}\right) \phi^{3} \\
& +\left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right)^{2} \phi^{4} \tag{7.28}
\end{align*}
$$

### 7.4 Accuracy

It is convenient to consider the single initial-value problem as in Chapter 6

$$
\begin{equation*}
D^{2} y \equiv y^{\prime \prime}(t)=f(t, y) . \quad t>t_{0}, \quad y\left(t_{0}\right)=y_{0}, \quad y^{\prime}\left(t_{0}\right)=z_{0} \tag{7.29}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $y=y(t)$ and $D^{2} \equiv \frac{d^{2}}{d t^{2}}$. The numerical solution to this problem may be obtained from the formula

$$
\begin{equation*}
y(t+l)=\{\exp (l D)+\exp (-l D)\} y(t)-y(t-l) \tag{7.30}
\end{equation*}
$$

Replacing $\theta$ by $l D$ in (7.24) and then substituting the value of $\exp (l D)+$ $\exp (-l D)$ in (7.30) leads to

$$
\begin{align*}
y(t+l)= & -\left\{q_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t+l)+q_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t+l)+q_{3} l^{6} y^{(8)}(t+l)+q_{4} l^{8} y^{(8)}(t+l)\right\} \\
+ & 2\left\{y(t)+p_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)+p_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t)+p_{3} l^{6} y^{(8)}(t)\right\} \\
- & \left\{y(t-l)+q_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t-l)+q_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t-l)+q_{3} l^{6} y^{(6)}(t-l)\right. \\
& \left.+q_{4} l^{8} y^{(8)}(t-l)\right\} \tag{7.31}
\end{align*}
$$

in which $y_{n}$ is an approximation to $y\left(t_{n}\right)$ and

$$
\begin{aligned}
p_{1}= & 2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}, \\
p_{2}= & \frac{a_{1}}{3}-\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{24}, \\
p_{3}= & \left\{\frac{a_{3}}{6}-\frac{3}{2} a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{2} a_{3}+\frac{a_{1}}{8}\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{7}{24} a_{2}-\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{6}+\frac{2}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}-\frac{1}{48}\right\}, \\
q_{1}= & 2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}, \\
q_{2}= & \frac{a_{1}-a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{12},}{q_{3}=}=\frac{1}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-\frac{a_{2}}{12}+2 a_{2} a_{3}-a_{2}^{2}-a_{3}^{2}, \\
q_{4}= & \left(-\frac{1}{24}+\frac{a_{1}}{6}-\frac{a_{2}}{2}+a_{3}\right)^{2} .
\end{aligned}
$$

The associated local truncation error is

$$
\begin{align*}
L[y(t) ; l]= & y(t+l)+q_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t+l)+q_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t+l)+q_{3} l^{6} y^{(8)}(t+l) \\
& +q_{4} l^{8} y^{(8)}(t+l) \\
- & 2\left\{y(t)+p_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)+p_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t)+p_{3} l^{6} y^{(8)}(t)\right\} \\
+ & \left\{y(t-l)+q_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t-l)+q_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t-l)+q_{3} l^{6} y^{(6)}(t-l)\right. \\
& \left.+q_{4} l^{8} y^{(8)}(t-l)\right\} \tag{7.32}
\end{align*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{align*}
L[y(t) ; l] & =y(t+l)+y(t-l) \\
& +q_{1} l^{2}\left\{y^{\prime \prime}(t+l)+y^{\prime \prime}(t-l)\right\} \\
& +q_{2} l^{4}\left\{y^{(4)}(t+l)+y^{(4)}(t-l)\right\} \\
& +q_{3} l^{8}\left\{y^{(6)}(t+l)+y^{(6)}(t-l)\right\} \\
& +q_{4} l^{8}\left\{y^{(8)}(t+l)+y^{(8)}(t-l)\right\} \\
& -2\left\{y(t)+p_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)+p_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t)+p_{3} l^{6} y^{(6)}(t)\right\}
\end{align*}
$$

which may be expanded as a Taylor series about $y(t)$ to give

$$
\begin{aligned}
L[y(t) ; l] & =2\left\{y(t)+\frac{l^{2}}{2} y^{\prime \prime}+\frac{l^{4}}{24} y^{(4)}+\frac{l^{6}}{720} y^{(6)}+\ldots\right\} \\
& +2 q_{1} l^{2}\left\{y^{\prime \prime}(t)+\frac{l^{2}}{2} y^{(4)}+\frac{l^{4}}{24} y^{(8)}+\frac{l^{6}}{720} y^{(8)}+\ldots\right\} \\
& +2 q_{2} l^{4}\left\{y^{(4)}(t)+\frac{l^{2}}{2} y^{(8)}+\frac{l^{4}}{24} y^{(8)}+\frac{l^{6}}{720} y^{(10)}+\ldots\right\}
\end{aligned}
$$

$$
\begin{align*}
& +2 q_{3} l^{6}\left\{y^{(6)}(t)+\frac{l^{2}}{2} y^{(8)}+\frac{l^{4}}{24} y^{(10)}+\ldots\right\} \\
& +2 q_{4} l^{8}\left\{y^{(8)}(t)+\frac{l^{2}}{2} y^{(10)}+\ldots\right\} \\
& -2\left\{y(t)+p_{1} l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t)+p_{2} l^{4} y^{(4)}(t)+p_{3} l^{6} y^{(6)}(t)\right\} \tag{7.34}
\end{align*}
$$

After simplification (7.34) becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
L[y(t) ; l] & =\left(1+2 q_{1}-2 p_{1}\right) l^{2} y^{\prime \prime}(t) \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{12}+q_{1}+2 q_{2}-2 p_{2}\right) l^{4} y^{(4)}(t) \\
& +\left(\frac{1}{360}+\frac{q_{1}}{12}+q_{2}+2 q_{3}-2 p_{3}\right) l^{6} y^{(6)}(t) \\
& +O\left(l^{8}\right) . \tag{7.35}
\end{align*}
$$

Using the values of $p_{i}$ and $q_{i}(i=1,2,3)$ in (7.35) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
L[y(t) ; l] & =\left\{-\frac{149}{360}+\frac{5}{3} a_{1}-4 a_{2}+2 a_{3}-\frac{13}{12} a_{1}^{2}-3 a_{2}^{2}-a_{3}^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\frac{14}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+4 a_{2} a_{3}\right\} l^{6} y^{(6)}(t)+O\left(l^{8}\right) \tag{7.36}
\end{align*}
$$

### 7.5 Development of Parallel Algorithm

Suppose that $r_{i}\left(i=1,2,3,4, r_{i} \neq 0\right)$ are the distinct real zeros of $Q(\phi)$ defined by (7.28) then

$$
\begin{equation*}
\exp (l B)+\exp (-l B)=\sum_{i=1}^{4} c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1} \tag{7.37}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $B^{2}=A$ and $c_{i}(i=1,2,3,4)$, the partial-fraction coefficients, are defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{i}=\frac{P\left(r_{i}\right)}{\prod_{\substack{j=1 \\ j \neq i}}\left(1-\frac{r_{1}}{r_{2}}\right)}, i=1,2,3,4 \tag{7.38}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which

$$
\begin{align*}
P\left(r_{i}\right) & =2\left\{1+\left(2 a_{2}-a_{1}^{2}+\frac{1}{2}\right) r_{i}+\left(\frac{1}{3} a_{1}-\frac{1}{2} a_{1}^{2}-2 a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{3}+a_{2}^{2}-\frac{1}{24}\right) r_{i}^{2}\right. \\
& \left.+\left(\frac{a_{3}}{6}-\frac{3}{2} a_{1} a_{3}+2 a_{2} a_{3}+\frac{a_{1}}{8}-\frac{7}{24} a_{2}-\frac{a_{1}^{2}}{6}+\frac{2}{3} a_{1} a_{2}-\frac{a_{2}^{2}}{2}-\frac{1}{48}\right) r_{i}^{3}\right\} \tag{7.39}
\end{align*}
$$

$i=1,2,3,4$. So, using (7.37) in (6.13) gives

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbf{U}(t+l)=\left(\sum_{i=1}^{4} c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1}\right) \mathbf{U}(t)-\mathbf{U}(t-l) \tag{7.40}
\end{equation*}
$$

$t=l, 2 l, 3 l, \ldots$. Now let

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{i}\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right)^{-1} \mathrm{U}(t)=\mathrm{w}_{i}(t), \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{7.41}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then the systems of linear equations

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(I-\frac{l^{2}}{r_{i}} A\right) \mathbf{w}_{i}(t)=c_{i} \mathrm{U}(t), \quad i=1,2,3,4 \tag{7.42}
\end{equation*}
$$

can be solved for $\mathbf{w}_{i}(t)(i=1,2,3,4)$ on four different processors simultaneously, and finally

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\sum_{i=1}^{4} \mathbf{w}_{i}(t)-\mathrm{U}(t-l) \quad t=l, 2 l, 3 l, \ldots \tag{7.43}
\end{equation*}
$$

This algorithm is given in tabular form in Table 7.1.

### 7.6 Numerical Examples

As in Chapter 6, a representative of methods based on (7.21) will be used. So, taking $c=0.1, a_{1}=\frac{64}{25}, a_{2}=\frac{7}{3}$ and $a_{3}=\frac{547}{600}$ as before gives

$$
\begin{array}{ll}
r_{1}=0.879057959205939, & r_{2}=3.293208163041111, \\
r_{3}=4.000000000000405, & r_{4}=5.109949525352754
\end{array}
$$

as the real zeros of (7.28). Using these values in (7.38) gives

$$
\begin{aligned}
& c_{1}=-0.243656912725722 D+03, \quad c_{2}=0.506244897959209 D+03, \\
& c_{3}=-0.262087555440892 D+03, \quad c_{4}=0.149957020740562 D+01
\end{aligned}
$$

### 7.6.1 Example 1

Considering the one dimensional problem $\{(7.1)-(7.4)\}$ with $X=1, g(x)=$ $\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x)$ and $f(x)=0$ the model problem becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=c^{2} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<1, t>0 \tag{7.44}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x),  \tag{7.45}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =0 \leq x \leq 1  \tag{7.46}\\
0, & 0 \leq x \leq 1
\end{align*}
$$

and the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(1, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{7.47}
\end{equation*}
$$

This problem has theoretical solution

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\frac{1}{8} \sin (\pi x) \cos (c \pi t) . \tag{7.48}
\end{equation*}
$$

The theoretical solution at time $t=1.0$ is depicted in Figure 6.1.

Using Algorithm 1 the model problem $\{(7.44)-(7.47)\}$ is solved for $l, h=$ $\frac{1}{12}, \frac{1}{24}, \frac{1}{48}, \frac{1}{96}$, using $c=\frac{1}{10}$ at $t=1.0,2.0$ and 3.0. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 1$ and gives maximum error at the centre of the region except for $h=\frac{1}{12}$. The numerical solution for $h, l=\frac{1}{12}$ at time $t=1.0$ is depicted in Figure 7.1. All other
numerical solutions produce similar graphs. Maximum absolute errors with positions are given in Table 7.2. It is clear from Table 7.2 that the new method is better than fourth order for larger values of $h$ and $l$ and it is fourth-order over all. Table 7.2 shows that with the passage of time the maximum absolute error grows slightly.

### 7.6.2 Example 2

Considering the one dimensional hyperbolic problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial t^{2}}=\frac{1}{16 \pi^{2}} \frac{\partial^{2} u}{\partial x^{2}}, \quad 0<x<0.5, \quad t>0 \tag{7.49}
\end{equation*}
$$

subject to the initial conditions

$$
\begin{align*}
u(x, 0) & =0, \quad 0 \leq x \leq 0.5  \tag{7.50}\\
\frac{\partial u(x, 0)}{\partial t} & =\sin (4 \pi x), \quad 0 \leq x \leq 0.5 \tag{7.51}
\end{align*}
$$

and the boundary conditions

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(0, t)=u(1, t)=0, \quad t>0 \tag{7.52}
\end{equation*}
$$

The theoretical solution of this problem

$$
\begin{equation*}
u(x, t)=\sin (4 \pi x) \sin (t) \tag{7.53}
\end{equation*}
$$

([6]) at time $t=0.5$ is depicted in Figure 6.3.
Using again Algorithm 1 the model problem $\{(7.49)-(7.52)\}$ is solved for $l, h=\frac{1}{24}, \frac{1}{48}, \frac{1}{96}, \frac{1}{192}$ at $t=0.5$ and 1.0. In these experiments the method behaves smoothly over the whole interval $0 \leq x \leq 0.5$. The numerical solution for $h, l=\frac{1}{24}$ at time $t=0.5$ is depicted in Figure 7.2. All other numerical solutions produce better graphs. Maximum absolute errors with positions are given in Table 7.3. It is clear from Table 7.3 that the method is fourth order but with the passage of time maximum absolute error grows slightly.

Table 7.1: Algorithm 1

| Steps | Processor 1 | Processor 2 | Processor 3 | Processor 4 |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $\begin{gathered} 1 \\ \text { Input } \end{gathered}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{1}, c_{1} \\ & \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{2}, c_{2} \\ & \mathrm{U}_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{3}, c_{3} \\ & U_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & l, r_{4}, c_{4} \\ & U_{0}, A \end{aligned}$ |
| $\overline{2}$ <br> Compute | $I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{2}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A$ | $I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} A$ |
| 3 <br> Decompose | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{l}{r_{1}} A \\ & =L_{1} U_{1} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{2} U_{2} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{3}} A \\ & =L_{3} U_{3} \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & I-\frac{1}{r_{4}} A \\ & =L_{4} U_{4} \end{aligned}$ |
| $\begin{gathered} 4 \\ \text { Find } \end{gathered}$ | Solution at the first time step |  |  |  |
| 5 <br> Solve | $\begin{aligned} & L_{1} U_{1} \mathbf{w}_{1}(t) \\ & =c_{1} \mathrm{U}(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{2} U_{2} W_{2}(t) \\ & =c_{2} U(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{3} U_{3} W_{3}(t) \\ & =c_{3} U(t) \end{aligned}$ | $\begin{aligned} & L_{4} U_{4} w_{4}(t) \\ & =c_{4} U(t) \end{aligned}$ |
| 6 | $\mathrm{U}(t+l)=\mathrm{w}_{1}(t)+\mathrm{w}_{2}(t)+\mathrm{w}_{3}(t)+\mathrm{w}_{4}(t)-\mathrm{U}(t-l)$ |  |  |  |
| 7 | GO TO Step 5 for next time step |  |  |  |

Table 7.2: Maximum absolute errors for Example 1.

| N | 11 | 23 | 47 | 95 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $h, l$ | $\frac{1}{12}$ | $\frac{1}{24}$ | $\frac{1}{48}$ | $\frac{1}{96}$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=1.0$ | $0.52028 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.19602 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $0.12301 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.92815 \mathrm{D}-10$ |
| Positions | 1,11 | 12 | 24 | 50 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=2.0$ | $0.13930 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.74557 \mathrm{D}-7$ | $0.46802 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.35069 \mathrm{D}-9$ |
| Positions | 1,11 | 12 | 24 | 48 |
|  |  |  |  |  |
| $t=3.0$ | $0.24834 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.15392 \mathrm{D}-6$ | $0.96614 \mathrm{D}-8$ | $0.72430 \mathrm{D}-9$ |
| Positions | 3,9 | 12 | 24 | 48 |

Positiona are shown by space steps.

Table 7.3: Maximum absolute errors for Example 2.

| N | 11 | 23 | 47 | 95 |
| :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $h, l$ | $\frac{1}{24}$ | $\frac{1}{48}$ | $\frac{1}{98}$ | $\frac{1}{192}$ |
| $t=0.5$ | $0.23782 \mathrm{D}-4$ | $0.16556 \mathrm{D}-5$ | $0.65911 \mathrm{D}-7$ |  |
| 1,23 | 12,36 | $0.41566 \mathrm{D}-8$ |  |  |
| Positions | 1,11 | 1,23 |  |  |
| $t=1.0$ <br> Positions |  <br> $0.16556 \mathrm{D}-3$ <br> 1,11 | $0.77784 \mathrm{D}-5$ <br> 6,18 | $0.48878 \mathrm{D}-6$ <br> 12,36 | $0.30810 \mathrm{D}-7$ |

Figure 7.1


Figure 7.1: Numerical solution of example 1 for $h, l=\frac{1}{12}$ at time $t=1.0$

Figure 7.2


Figure 7.2: Numerical solution of example 1 for $h, l=\frac{1}{24}$ at time $t=0.5$

## Chapter 8

## Summary and Conclusions

### 8.1 Summary

The main theme of this thesis was to find some new numerical methods which are stable, require only real arithmetic and are third- or fourth-order accurate in space and time for parabolic/ hyperbolic partial differential equations and to develop parallel algorithms for their implementation.

Chapter 1 was written for introductory purposes and covers some general topics. For example, a basic introduction is given in Section 1.1, an introduction to the method of lines, very important in solving time-dependent partial differential equations, is given in Section 1.2, important notations are mentioned in Section 1.3, rational approximations to $\exp (t)$ are mentioned in Section 1.4 and some mathematical properties of finite-difference methods, for example, error analysis, consistency, stability and convergence, are outlined in Section 1.5.

In Chapter 2 a family of third-order numerical methods for the advection equation with constant coefficients was developed. In Section 2.2, the
model problem is outlined and third-order accuracy in the space component is achieved at all points of the space discretization in Section 2.3 and a new governing matrix was obtained. The third-order accuracy in the complementary component is also obtained using a rational approximation to the matrix exponential function, which can be resolved imto partial fractions, in Section 2.3. Since efficiency is also an important object of this thesis, a parallel algorithm which is implementable on an architecture consisting of three processors is developed in Section 2.4. This chapter is concluded by numerical examples which show that the methods are very effective. Pictorial evidence is also appended for support. This method is also modified for a non-linear problem in Section 2.6 and tested on a numerical example.

In Chapter 3 a family of fourth-order numerical methods for the advection equation, with constant coefficients, subject to some boundary conditions, is introduced. Fourth-order accuracy in the space component at all points of the space discretization is derived in Section 3.1 and a new matrix is obtained. A rational approximation, involving three parameters, is used to achieve fourth-order accuracy in the time variable. A parallel algorithm which is implementable on an architecture consisting of four processors is developed in Section 3.2. At the end of this chapter the same numerical examples, which are given in Chapter 2, are considered and it is found that numerical results are very accurate. Two numerical results are compared with latest research and depicted for pictorial evidence.

A family of third-order numerical methods is developed for the linear advection-diffusion equation in Chapter 4. Derivation of the methods is outlined in Section 4.2 in which the matrix exponential function is approximated by the rational approximation introduced in Section 1.3 of Chapter 1. Since
most of the mathematics needed in this section is concerned in solving a system of linear equations so it was not presented in detail. In Section 4.3, a parallel algorithm was developed and presented in tabular form in Table 4.1. This algorithm is suitable for an architecture consisting of three processors. In Section 4.4 a representative of these methods is used to find numerical solution of a problem. The analytical and numerical solutions are depicted at the end of the chapter.

Considering again the model problem, discussed in Section 4.1, a family of fourth-order numerical methods is developed in Chapter 5. Derivation of the methods is outlined in Section 5.1 in which the matrix exponential function is approximated by the rational approximation introduced in Section 1.3. Once again only essential steps are presented in this section. In Section 5.2 a parallel algorithm was developed and presented in tabular form in Table 5.1. This algorithm is suitable for an architecture consisting of four processors. In Section 5.3 a representative of these methods is used to find numerical solutions of the problem given in Chapter 4. The numerical solution is graphed and appended at the end of this chapter.

A family of third-order numerical methods is developed for the linear, second-order wave equation in Chapter 6. The model problem is outlined in Section 6.1 and the method is derived in Section 6.3 in which the matrix exponential function is approximated again by the rational approximation introduced in Section 1.3 of Chapter 1. In Section 6.6, a parallel algorithm was developed and presented in tabular form in Table 6.1. This algorithm is suitable for an architecture consisting of at least three processors. In Section 6.7 a representative of these methods is used to find numerical solutions of two different problems. The analytical and some numerical solutions are
depicted at the end of the chapter.

Considering again the model problem, discussed in Section 6.1, a family of fourth-order numerical methods is developed in Chapter 7. Derivation of the methods is outlined in Section 7.1 in which the matrix exponential function is approximated by the rational approximation introduced in Section 1.3. In Section 7.4 accuracy is shown to be fourth-order and in Section 7.5 a parallel algorithm is developed and presented in tabular form in Table 7.1. This algorithm suitable for an architecture consisting of at least four processors needs the solution at first time-step in different way which is outlined in Section 7.2. In Section 7.6 a representative of these methods is used to find numerical solutions of the problems given in Chapter 6. Two numerical solutions are graphed and appended at the end of the chapter.

It has been shown that all the numerical methods developed for all the problems discussed have a number of advantages over existing methods. The development of each method ensures that the high-order accuracy is maintained at mesh points adjacent to the boundaries of the region of integration. To overcome the resulting increase in bandwidth of the governing matrix, a pre-elimination routine can be used. The other main advantage of the methods is that they require the use of only real arithmetic, compared to the need of competing methods to use complex arithmetic in their implementation [4,5].

### 8.2 Conclusions

Up-to-now there has been no numerical method which achieves higher-order accuracy in time and the space variable. So the work considered in this thesis
regarded as a first attempt in this direction. I believe that this work is a major contribution to the existing research.

## Bibliography

[1] Abbott M.B. and Basco D.R.,Computational Fluid Dynamics: An Introduction For Engineers, Longman Singapore Publishers (Pte) Ltd. 1995.
[2] Ames W. A., Numerical Methods for Partial Differential Equations, Academic Press, Inc. New Yark, 1977.
[3] Andrews, L. C., Elementary Partial Differential Equations with Boundary Value Problems, Academic Press, Inc (London) Ltd. 1986.
[4] Arigu, M.A., Twizell, E.H. and Gumel, A.B., "Parallel algorithms for second-order hyperbolic equations", Parallel Algorithms and Applications, 5, 119-128, 1995.
[5] Arigu, M.A., Twizell, E.H. and Gumel, A.B., "Sequential and parallel methods for solving first-order hyperbolic equations", Communications in Numerical Methods in Engineering, 12, 557-568, 1996.
[6] Burden, R. and Faires, J. D., Numerical Analysis, PWS-Kent Publishing Company, Boston, 1993(fifth edition).
[7] Butler, R. and Kerr, E., Introduction to Numerical Methods, Sir Isaac Pitman \& Sons Ltd., London, 1962.
[8] Cheema, T.A., M.Sc. Dissertation, Brunel University, Uxbridge, Middlesex, England, 1995.
[9] Ciment, M. and Levental, S.H., "High-order compact implicit schemes for wave equation", Math. Comp., 29(132), 985-994, 1975.
[10] Conte, S. D. and Boor, C. de, Elementary Numerical Analysis, McGrawHill Book Company London, 1988.
[11] Fairweather, G. Gourlay, A.R. and Mitchell, A.R., "Some high accuracy difference schemes with a splitting operator for equations of parabolic and elliptic type", Numer. Math., 10, 56-66, 1967.
[12] Fairweather, G. and Mitchell, A.R., "A high accuracy alternating direction method for the wave equation", J. Inst. Math. Applic., 1, 309-316, 1965.
[13] Gerald, C. F. and Wheatley, P. O., Applied Numerical Analysis, Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc., California, 1994.
[14] Gladwell, J. and Wait, R. A Survey of Numerical Methods for Partial Differential Equations, Oxford University Press, New York, 1979.
[15] Gregory, J. and Redmond, D., Introduction to Numerical Analysis, Jones and Bartlett Publishers, Boston, 1994.
[16] Iserles A., A First Course in the Numerical Solutions of Differential Equations, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, England, 1996.
[17] Jain, M.K., Numerical Solution of Differential Equations, Wiley Eastern Limited, Delhi, 1991.
[18] Jain, M.K., Iyengar, S.R.K., and Jain, R.K. Computational Methods for Partial Differential Equations, Wiley Eastern Limited, New Delhi, 1994.
[19] Jain, M.K., Jain, R.K. and Mohanty, R.K. "A fourth-order difference method for the one-dimensional general quasilinear parabolic partial differential equations", Numerical Methods for Partial Differential Equations, 6, 311-319, 1990.
[20] Khaliq, A. Q. M. and Twizell, E. H., "Backward difference replacements of the space derivative in the first-order hyperbolic equations," Comput. Methods Applic. Mech. Engng., 43, 45-56, 1984.
[21] Khaliq, A. Q. M., Twizell, E. H. and Voss, D. A., ${ }^{\text {n }}$ On parallel algorithms for semidiscretized parabolic partial differential equations based on subdiagonal Padé approximations", Numer. Meth. Partial Diff. Equ. 9, 107-116, 1993.
[22] Lambert, J. D., Numerical Methods for Ordinary Differential Systems: The Initial Value Problem, John Wiley \& Sons, Chichester, 1991.
[23] Lapidus, L. and Pinder G.F., Numerical Solutions of Partial Differential Equations in Science and Engineering, John Wiley \& Sons, New York, 1982.
[24] Lees, M., "Alternating direction methods for hyperbolic differential equations", J. Soc. Indust. Applic. Math., 10, 610-616, 1962.
[25] Malik, S. A. T. and Twizell, E. H., "A third-order parallel splitting method for parabolic partial differential equations", ICPAM 95, Bahrain, 19-22 November, 1995.
[26] Mitchell, A. R., Computational Methods for Partial Differential Equations; John Wiley \& Sons, Chichester, 1969.
[27] Mitchell, A. R. and Griffiths, D. F., The Finite Difference Method in Partial Differential Equations; John Wiley, New York, 1980.
[28] Mostowski, A. and Stark, M., Introduction to Higher Algebra, Pergamon Press London, 1964.
[29] Norsett, S. P. and Wolfbrandt, A., "Attainable order of rational approximations to the exponential function with only real poles", BIT 17, 200-208, 1977.
[30] Noye, J., "Finite difference methods for partial differential equations", Numerical Solutions of Partial Differential Equations, J. Noye (ed.) North-Holland, 3-137, 1982.
${ }^{\text {[31] }}$ Oliger, J., "Fourth-order difference methods for the initial boundaryvalue problem for hyperbolic equations", Math. Comp., 28, 15-25, 1974.
[32] Reusch, M. F., Ratzan, L., Pomphrey, N. and Park, W., "Diagonal Padé ${ }^{\text {app }}$ proximations for initial value problems", SIAM J. Sci. Stat. Comput. Ө, 829-838, 1988.

Richtmyer, R.D. and Morton, K.W., Difference Methods for Initial-value Problems, John Wiley \& Sons, New York, 1967.

Samarskii, A.A., "Local one-dimensional difference schemes for multidimensional hyperbolic equations in an arbitrary region", Z. Vycisl.
[3今, Mat. i Mat. Fiz., 44, 222-223, 1964.
Smith, G.D., Numerical Solution of PDE's: Finite Difference Methods, Clarendon Press, Oxford, third edition, 1985.
[36] Stephenson, G., An Introduction to Partial Differential Equations for Science Students, Longman Group Ltd London, 1968.
[37] Taj, M.S.A., Ph.D. Thesis, Brunel University, Uxbridge, Middlesex, England, 1995.
[38] Taj, M.S.A. and Twizell, E.H., "A family of third-order parallel splitting methods for parabolic partial differetial equations". To appear in International Journal of Computer Mathematics, 1998.
[39] Taj, M.S.A.and Twizell, E.H., "A family of fourth-order parallel splitting methods for parabolic partial differential equations", Numer. Methods Partial Differential Eq, 13, 357-373, 1997.
[40] Twizell, E.H., "An explicit difference method for the wave equation with extended stability range", BIT, 19, 378-383, 1979.
[41] Twizell, E. H., Computational Methods for Partial Differential Equations, Ellis Horwood Limited Chichester and John Wiley \& Sons, New York, 1984.
[42] Twizell, E. H., "M.Sc. Lecture Notes", 1995.
[43] Twizell, E. H., Numerical Methods, with Applications in the Biomedical Sciences, Ellis Horwood Limited Chichester and John Wiley \& Sons, New York, 1988.
[44] Twizell, E. H., Gumel, A. B., Arigu, M. A., Kubota, K. and Carey, C. M. M., "Splitting methods for parabolic and hyperbolic partial differential equations", Brunel University Department of Mathematics and Statistics Technical Report TR/08/93, 1993.
[45] Twizell, E. H., Gumel, A. B. and Arigu, M. A., "Second-order, $L_{0}$ stable methods for the heat equation with time-dependent boundary conditions", Advances in Computational Mathematics, 6, 333-352, 1996.
[46] Twizell, E. H. and Khaliq, A. Q. M. "A family of predictor-corrector methods for second-order hyperbolic equations", Communications in Applied Numerical Methods, 5, 47-51, 1989.
[47] Twizell, E. H., Khaliq, A. Q. M. and Voss, D. A., "Sequential and parallel algorithms for second-order initial-value problems", WSSIAA 2, 399-412, 1993.
[48] Twizell, E. H. and Smith, P. S., "Numerical modelling of heat flow in the human torso I: finite difference methods", Comput. Biol. Med., 12(2), 1982.
[49] Twizell, E. H. and Tirmizi, S.I.A., "A family of methods for the wave equations in one- and two-space dimensions", Numerical Methods for Partial Differential Equations, 2, 105-125, 1985.
[50] Voss, D. A. and Khaliq, A. Q. M., "Parallel LOD methods for merond order time dependent PDEs", Computers Math. Applic., 30(10), 739 7551995.
[51] Watson, W. A., Philipson, T. and Oates, P. J., Numerical Analynis the Mathematics of Computing, Edward Arnold (Publinherw) I.id, Iondon, 1981.
[52] Wilkinson, J. H., The Algebraic Eigenvalue Problem, Clascudon I'rema, Oxford, 1965.
[53] Williams, W. E., Fourier Series and Boundary Value Problems, George Allen \& Unwin Ltd, London, 1973.
[54] Yevick, D., Glasner, M. and Hermansson, B., "Generalized Padé approximations-Application to split operator alternating direction implicit finite difference and finite element techniques", App. Math. Lett. 5 (4), 85-90, 1992.
[55] Zakian, V., "Comment on rational approximations to the matrix exponential", Electron. Lett. 7, 261-262, 1971.

